John Adams
Library.

IN THE CUSTODY OF THE
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.

SHELF No.
ADAMS
252.4

To

The President of the U. S.

Sept. 22d. 1799

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010

http://www.archive.org/details/memoirsofmajorge1798heat

MEMOIRS

OF

MAJOR-GENERAL *HEATH.*

CONTAINING

ANECDOTES, DETAILS of SKIRMISHES, BATTLES, and other MILITARY EVENTS,

DURING THE

AMERICAN WAR.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

Published according to Act of Congress.

PRINTED AT BOSTON,
BY I. THOMAS AND E. T. ANDREWS,
FAUST'S STATUE, No. 45, NEWBURY-STREET.
Sold by them; by I. THOMAS, Worcester; by THOMAS, ANDREWS & PENNIMAN, Albany; by THOMAS, ANDREWS & BUTLER, Baltimore; and by the Bookfellers throughout the Continent.

AUG. 1798.

**
ADAMS
W5W.4

Advertiſement.

IT was not the intention, to publiſh the Memoirs during the life-time of the writer. They were penned for his own review, and the information and ſatisfaction of his own family, as well as poſterity: If any ſhould think their preſent publication in any reſpects relative to himſelf as too oſtentatious, candour, it is preſumed, will decide that there is no alternative, unleſs the Memoirs are *mutilated in facts*, or *denied at preſent a publication*. The preſſing importunity of very many is the ſole reaſon of their appearance at this time.

SUCH of the facts as happened under the obſervation, or within the immediate knowledge of the writer, have been impartially narrated: Thoſe which he has been obliged to collect from other information, have been as faithfully attempted; but their authenticity cannot be equally vouched for. There are doubtleſs many errors. It is the lot of man to be fallible.

THE AUTHOR.

INTRODUCTION.

NATURE ſeems to have decreed, that not only the minor branches of families, when they arrive at a proper age of maturity, ſhall ſeparate from their parents, and become diſtinct families; but that Colonies, when they arrive at a certain degree of population and affluence, ſhall ſeparate from the mother State, and become independent and ſovereign. Howſoever fit and proper this economy of nature may be, experience has taught the world, that it has been the miſtaken policy of nations, in almoſt all ages, to oppoſe ſuch ſeparations, as the period approximates, by an impolitic exerciſe of power, thereby alienating the affections of the Coloniſts, and rouſing in their breaſts thoſe innate principles of liberty which nature hath implanted; (but which, had they not been awakened by a ſeverity of conduct, would have much longer repoſed on the boſom of a mother, and even have ſpurned the idea of ſeparation) and have alſo made uſe of armed force, in the moſt unnatural and cruel manner, to hold in ſubjection thoſe by nature in every reſpect free as themſelves. And in the proſecution of a war thus enkindled, alliances are ſought for, and formed, by both parties, even with thoſe who before were conſidered as the enemies of each. This has been exemplified in the conduct of Great-Britain towards her American Colonies, and by the people of the now United States of America, in their ſtruggle for freedom, and the eſtabliſhment of independence and ſovereignty.

IT

It is not the intention of the writer to go into a detail of the firſt ſettlement of this country, or the viciſſitudes which have attended it, at different periods; nor of the riſe of the late revolution; as theſe have already been attempted by ſeveral writers, and probably will hereafter be further elucidated by other pens.

To preſerve and perpetuate a *daily Journal of occurrences*, through nearly the whole of the late American war, is the preſent object. And although the following pages are not decorated with the flowers of Greece or Rome, and for their diction cannot claim the patronage of the learned, they contain a ſtate of facts in detail, which may not be unpleaſing to poſterity, who will wiſh, as much as is poſſible, to learn from every remaining veſtige, the conduct and ſucceſſes of their anceſtors, in that revolution which laid the foundation of the independence and ſovereignty of their country. To them, therefore, are the following Memoirs bequeathed, by him who was an eye-witneſs to many of the facts which are related, and who collected the others from the beſt information the then moment and circumſtances would admit.

That the United States of America, by their virtue, their wiſdom and their valour, may ſupport and maintain the noble achievements of their anceſtors, and render them ſtill more brilliant, is the earneſt wiſh of their devoted,

Humble Servant,

W. HEATH.

Roxbury, 1798.

MEMOIRS, &c.

MAJOR-GENERAL *William Heath* deſcended from an ancient family in Roxbury, near Boſton, in Maſſachuſetts, and is of the fifth generation of the family who have inherited the ſame real eſtate, (taken up in a ſtate of nature) not large, but fertile, and pleaſantly ſituated. He was born March 2d, (old ſtile) 1737, was brought up a farmer, of which profeſſion he is yet paſſionately fond. He is of middling ſtature, light complexion, very corpulent, and bald-headed, which led the French officers who ſerved in America, very frequently to compare him to the Marquis of Granby.* From his childhood he was remarkably fond of military exerciſes, which paſſion grew up with him, and as he arrived at years of maturity, led him to procure, and attentively to ſtudy, every military treatiſe in the Engliſh language, which was obtainable. This, with a ſtrong memory, rendered him fully acquainted with the *theory* of war in all its branches and duties, from the private ſoldier, to the Commander in Chief.

Through the inactive ſtate of the militia company to which he belonged, in the ſpring of the year 1765,

* Chaſtellux's Travels.

1765, he went over to Boſton, and entered a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. This immediately recommended him to the notice of the Colonel of the firſt regiment of militia in the county of Suffolk, who ſent for him, and importuned him to take the command of his own company; to which Mr. Heath was reluctant; apprehenſive that his youth, and ſtepping over thoſe who had a better claim, by former office in the company, to the command of it, might produce an uneaſineſs. He was, however, commiſſioned by Gov. Barnard; and his apprehenſions of uneaſineſs proved to be groundleſs.

In the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, he was choſen, and ſerved, firſt as Lieutenant, and afterwards as Captain.

In the firſt regiment of the militia of Suffolk, he became the military favourite of Gov. Barnard, who publickly declared, that he would not only make him Colonel of the regiment, but, if it were in his power, a General Officer alſo.

As the diſpute between Great-Britain and her American Colonies put on a more ſerious aſpect, our Captain did not heſitate, for a moment, to declare his ſentiments in favour of the rights and liberties of his fellow-countrymen. This alarmed Gov. Barnard's apprehenſions, but did not alter his open conduct towards our Captain; though he privately intimated, that if he ſhould promote him, he might injure the cauſe of his royal maſter. It was afterwards intimated to our Captain, that if he was not advanced to the command of the regiment, he might reſt aſſured, that his feelings would never (during Gov. Barnard's adminiſtration) be hurt by any other officer being promoted over him; which was verified; Gov. Barnard leaving the province with this regiment unorganized.

Capt.

Capt. Heath, convinced that the cloud was rapidly gathering, and would aſſuredly burſt over America, in the beginning of the year 1770, commenced his addreſſes to the public, under the ſignature of *A Military Countryman*, and which were occaſionally continued until hoſtilities commenced. In them he urged the importance of military diſcipline, and ſkill in the uſe of arms, as the only means, under Heaven, that could ſave the country from falling a prey to any daring invader.

Gov. Hutchinſon ſucceeded Gov. Barnard. He organized the firſt regiment in Suffolk; and, as might be expected, our Captain had a reſpite from command.

When it was recommended to the *people* of Maſſachuſetts, to chooſe officers themſelves to command them, our Captain was unanimouſly choſen to take the command of the firſt company in the town of Roxbury, (his old and favourite company;) and on the meeting of the Captains and ſubalterns of the firſt regiment of militia in Suffolk, he was choſen Colonel.

The people of Maſſachuſetts, having determined to ſupport their rights and liberties at every hazard, (finding that ſuch was the ſenſe of the people of their ſiſter Colonies) after the diſſolution of their General Court, elected a Provincial Congreſs. This Congreſs appointed a *Committee of Safety* (of whom our Colonel was one,) veſted with executive powers; and another committee, called the *Committee of Supplies*. The latter were to purchaſe military ſtores, proviſions, &c. and depoſit them in ſuch places as the former ſhould direct. Both committees entered on the duties of their reſpective functions. The Provincial Congreſs voted a ſum of money for the purpoſe of procuring military ſtores and proviſions; and a quantity of both were collected, and ſtored in the town of Concord.

The militia, and the corps of minute-men, as they were called, (the latter compoſed of the young and active) were furniſhed with officers of their own chooſing. The greateſt attention was exhibited by the officers, which was as cheerfully ſeconded by the citizen ſoldiers, to acquire a knowledge of military duty.

In the month of February, 1775, the Provincial Congreſs paſſed the following reſolutions:

"In Provincial Congreſs, *Cambridge*, February 9*th*, 1775—Reſolved, That the Hon. *Jedidiah Prebble*, Eſq. Hon. *Artemas Ward*, Eſq. Col. *Seth Pomeroy*, Col. *John Thomas*, and Col. *William Heath*, be, and they hereby are, appointed General Officers, whoſe buſineſs and duty it ſhall be, with ſuch and ſo many of the militia of this province as ſhall be aſſembled by order of the Committee of Safety, effectually to oppoſe and reſiſt ſuch attempt or attempts as ſhall be made for carrying into execution an act of the Britiſh Parliament, entitled, "An Act for the better regulation of the Government of the Province of Maſſachuſetts Bay in New-England"—or who ſhall attempt the carrying into execution, by force, another act of the Britiſh Parliament, entitled, "An Act for the more impartial adminiſtration of juſtice, in caſes of perſons queſtioned for any act done by them in the execution of the law, or for the ſuppreſſion of riots and tumults in the Province of Maſſachuſetts Bay"—ſo long as the ſaid militia ſhall be retained by the Committee of Safety, and no longer. And the ſaid General Officers ſhall, while in the ſaid ſervice, command, lead and conduct, in ſuch oppoſition, in the order in which they are above named; any order of any former Congreſs varying herefrom, notwithſtanding."

"In

"In Provincial Congrefs, *Cambridge*, February *15th*, 1775—Refolved, That the Hon. *John Whitcomb*, Efq. be added to the General Officers.

A true extract from the minutes,

(Signed) BENJ. LINCOLN, *Sec'ry.*"

Gen. Prebble declined the fervice.

In the month of March following, the Provincial Congrefs appointed a committee to make a minute inquiry into the ftate of the operations of the Britifh army. On the 20th of the fame month, the committee reported, that the Britifh army then confifted of about 2850 men, diftributed as follows: On Boſton common, about 1700; on Fort-Hill, 400; on Boſton neck, 340; in barracks at the Caſtle, 330; quartered in King-ſtreet, 80;—that they were erecting works on Boſton neck, on both ſides of the way, well conſtructed and well executed; the works were in forwardneſs, and then mounted with ten braſs and two iron cannon; that the old fortification, at the entrance of the town, was repaired, and rendered much ſtronger by the addition of timber and earth to the parapet; that ten pieces of iron cannon were mounted on the old platforms; that a blockhouſe, brought from Governor's Iſland, was erecting on the ſouth ſide of the neck, between the old fortification and the new works advanced on the neck.

On the 18th of April, our General had been ſitting with the Committee of Safety, at Menotomy in Cambridge; and on his return home, ſoon after he left the committee, and about ſun-ſetting, he met eight or nine Britiſh officers on horſeback, with their ſwords and piſtols, riding up the road towards Lexington. The time of day, and diſtance from Boſton, excited ſuſpicion of ſome deſign. They indeed were out reconnoitring, and getting intelligence, but were not moleſted.

On

On the 19th, at day-break, our General was awoke, called from his bed, and informed that a detachment of the Britiſh army were out; that they had croſſed from Boſton to Phipps's farm, in boats, and had gone towards Concord, as was ſuppoſed, with intent to deſtroy the public ſtores. They probably had notice that the committees had met the preceding day at Wetherby's tavern, at Menotomy; for, when they came oppoſite to the houſe, they halted. Several of the gentlemen ſlept there during the night. Among them were Col. Orne, Col. Lee, and Mr. Gerry. One of them awoke, and informed the others that a body of the Britiſh were before the houſe. They immediately made their eſcape, without time to dreſs themſelves, at the back door, receiving ſome injury from obſtacles in the way, in their undreſſed ſtate. They made their way into the fields. The country was immediately alarmed, and the minute-men and militia turned out with great ſpirit. Near Lexington meeting-houſe the Britiſh found the militia of that town drawn up by the road. Towards theſe they advanced, ordered them to diſperſe, huzzaed, and fired upon them; when ſeveral were killed and wounded, and the reſt diſperſed. This was the firſt ſhedding of blood in the American war.

This company continuing to ſtand ſo near to the road, after they had certain notice of the advancing of the Britiſh in force, was but a too much braving of danger; for they were ſure to meet with inſult, or injury, which they could not repel. Bravery, when called to action, ſhould always take the ſtrong ground on the baſis of reaſon.

The Britiſh proceeded on to Concord, where they deſtroyed a part of the ſtores, while others were ſaved by the vigilance, activity, or policy, of the inhabitants. In the latter, a Capt. Wheeler practiſed with ſuch

ſuch addreſs, as to ſave a conſiderable quantity of flour, although expoſed to the *critical examination* of a Britiſh officer.

The Britiſh had ſent a party to the North Bridge, while they were deſtroying the ſtores in the town. A body of militia, who had retreated beyond the bridge, and collected in this quarter, now marched up reſolutely to the bridge. The Britiſh officer, finding their firmneſs, ordered his men to fire, which they did, and two men of the militia were killed. The fire was briſkly returned; ſome were killed and wounded of the enemy, and an officer taken priſoner. The Britiſh party retreated with precipitation to their main body, and the whole ſoon commenced their retreat towards Boſton; the militia galling them on all ſides. This detatchment, under the command of Col. Smith, muſt have been worn down, and the whole of them killed, or taken priſoners, had it not been for the reinforcement ſent out to them, under the command of Lord Percy, with two field-pieces, who joined them in the lower part of the town of Lexington.

Our General, in the morning, proceeded to the Committee of Safety. From the committee, he took a croſs road to Watertown, the Britiſh being in poſſeſſion of the Lexington road. At Watertown, finding ſome militia who had not marched, but applied for orders, he ſent them down to Cambridge, with directions to take up the planks, barricade the ſouth end of the bridge, and there to take poſt; that, in caſe the Britiſh ſhould, on their return, take that road to Boſton, their retreat might be impeded. He then puſhed to join the militia, taking a croſs road towards Lexington, in which he was joined by Dr. *Joſeph Warren*, (afterwards a Major-General) who kept with him.

Our

Our General joined the militia juſt after Lord Percy had joined the Britiſh; and having aſſiſted in forming a regiment, which had been broken by the ſhot from the Britiſh field-pieces, (for the diſcharge of theſe, together with the flames and ſmoke of ſeveral buildings, to which the Britiſh, nearly at the ſame time, had ſet fire, opened a new and more terrific ſcene;) and the Britiſh having again taken up their retreat, were cloſely purſued. On deſcending from the high grounds in Menotomy, on to the plain, the fire was briſk. At this inſtant, a muſket-ball came ſo near to the head of Dr. Warren, as to *ſtrike the pin out of the hair of his earlock*. Soon after, the right flank of the Britiſh was expoſed to the fire of a body of militia, which had come from Roxbury, Brooklyn, Dorcheſter, &c. For a few minutes the fire was briſk on both ſides; and the Britiſh had here recourſe to their field-pieces again; but they were now more familiar than before. Here the militia were ſo cloſe on the rear of the Britiſh, that Dr. *Downer*, an active and enterpriſing man, came to ſingle combat with a Britiſh ſoldier, whom he killed with his bayonet.

Not far from this place, ſeveral of the militia (among whom was Iſaac Gardner, Eſq. of Brooklyn, a valuable citizen) imprudently poſted themſelves behind ſome dry caſks, at Watſon's Corner, and near to the road, unſuſpicious of the enemy's flank-guard, which came behind them, and killed every one of them dead on the ſpot.

The militia continued to hang on the rear of the Britiſh, until they reached Bunker's Hill in Charleſtown; and it had become ſo duſk, as to render the flaſhes of the muſkets very viſible. At this inſtant, an officer on horſeback came up from the Medford road, and inquired the circumſtances of the enemy; adding, that about 700 men were cloſe behind, on their

their way from Salem to join the militia. Had these arrived a few minutes sooner, the left flank of the British must have been greatly exposed, and suffered considerably; perhaps their retreat would have been cut off. As soon as the British gained Bunker's Hill, they immediately formed in a line opposite to the neck; when our General judged it expedient to order the militia, who were now at the common, to halt, and give over the pursuit, as any further attempt upon the enemy, in that position, would have been futile. Pickering.

Our General immediately assembled the officers around him, at the foot of Prospect Hill, and ordered a guard to be formed, and posted near that place, centinels to be planted down to the neck, and patroles to be vigilant in moving during the night; and an immediate report to him, in case the enemy made any movements. The militia were then ordered to march to the town of Cambridge; where, after forming and sending off another guard to the points below the town, the whole were ordered to lie on their arms.

About midnight, there was an alarm that the enemy were coming up the river. It proved to be only an armed schooner, probably sent to make discovery. She got a-ground, and continued so until the next tide; and if there had been a single field-piece with the militia, she might have been taken. The marsh was too deep to approach sufficiently near to do any execution with small-arms; and the first day's hostilities of the ever memorable American war, was, on their part, without a single piece of cannon in the field! Gen. *Whitcomb* was in this day's battle.

On the morning of the 20th, our General ordered Capt. *John Battle*, of Dedham with his company of militia, to pass over the ground which had been the scene of action the preceding day, and to bury such of the slain as he should find unburied. The grounds around

around Cambridge were immediately reconnoitred, and alarm-poſts aſſigned to the ſeveral corps; and in caſe the Britiſh ſhould come out in ſuperior force, and drive the militia from the town, they were ordered to rally and form on the high grounds towards Watertown.

How to *feed* the aſſembled and aſſembling militia, was now the great object. All the eatables in the town of Cambridge, which could be ſpared, were collected for breakfaſt, and the college kitchen and utenſils procured for cooking. Some carcaſſes of beef and pork, prepared for the Boſton market on the 18th, at Little Cambridge, were ſent for, and obtained; and a large quantity of ſhip-bread at Roxbury, ſaid to belong to the Britiſh navy, was taken for the militia. Theſe were the firſt proviſions which were obtained.

At 11 o'clock, A. M. our General appointed Mr. *Joſeph Ward*, a gentleman of abilities, his Aid-de-camp and Secretary, (afterwards Muſter-Maſter-General of the army) who entered on the duties of his new office—This was the firſt appointment of the kind in the American army. Before noon, a letter was received from the Committee of Supplies at Concord, expreſſing their joy at the event of the preceding day, with aſſurances that every exertion in their power ſhould be put in exerciſe, to forward ſupplies to the militia in arms. In the afternoon, Gen. WARD arrived at Cambridge, who, being ſenior in the order of appointment, took the command accordingly.

In the battle on the 19th, the Britiſh were ſaid to have 65 killed, 180 wounded, and 28 made priſoners; in all, 273. Of the militia, 50 were killed, and 34 wounded; in all, 84. It might have been expected, that in a retreat of ſo many miles, the Britiſh loſs would have been greater; but it is to be remembered, that as they kept the road, the fences

(a large

(a large proportion of which are ſtone walls) covered their flanks almoſt to the height of their ſhoulders. It will alſo be obſerved, that the wounded of the militia did not bear the common proportion with the killed, and is an evidence that the Britiſh did not chooſe to encumber themſelves with priſoners, either wounded or not, as the marks left at *Watſon's Corner*, and on the height above Menotomy meeting-houſe, evinced: Nor was the daſhing in of many windows, the firing of muſket-balls into the houſes, in ſome of which there were only women and children, or the ſoldiers leaving their ranks, and going into the houſes to plunder, (in conſequence of which a number loſt their lives) marks of humanity or diſcipline.* Their whole force on this enterpriſe, including the reinforcement, was from 1500 to 2000 of their beſt troops.

Gen. WARD was now the Commander in Chief of the aſſembled army, and exerciſed the immediate command on the Cambridge ſide; while Gen. Thomas had the immediate command on the Roxbury ſide. A few days after this, the Cambridge camp being very numerous, and the Roxbury camp judged to be too weak, the Britiſh having gone over from Charleſtown to Boſton, Gen. Ward ordered our General, with three or four regiments, to march from Cambridge, and reinforce Gen. Thomas; and he continued in the Roxbury camp until after the arrival of Gen. WASHINGTON, in the month of July.

In the month of May, the Provincial Congreſs paſſed reſolutions for raiſing twenty-four regiments, to ſerve during the remainder of the year. The

* *Stedman*, in his Hiſtory of the American War, vol. 1ſt, p. 119, ſays, "Several of Smith's party were ſcalped by the Americans;" than which nothing can be more untrue. Both the wounded and the dead were treated with every mark of humanity and decency.

General Officers were each to have a regiment. As the new regiments began to recruit, the militia went home, and the camps became very weak; that at Roxbury did not exceed 1000 men. Had the Britiſh ſallied at that time, there would have been but few to oppoſe them on that ſide. However, the army ſoon became ſtrong, it being reinforced by the arrival of Gen. Putnam from Connecticut, Gen. Sullivan from New-Hampſhire, and Gen. Greene from Rhode-Iſland; each with a reſpectable body of troops; and, in the month of June, it was determined to take poſſeſſion of the heights of Charleſtown. Preparations were made for the purpoſe; and on the 16th, at night, a ſtrong detachment from the American army marched on, and broke ground on *Breed's Hill*, in front of Bunker's Hill. The latter ought to have been taken poſſeſſion of at the ſame time, but it was ſome how omitted.

By the morning of the 17th, the troops had a redoubt and line on its left flank in good forwardneſs, when they were diſcovered by the Britiſh. The Lively man-of-war firſt began to cannonade the Americans; ſhe was ſoon ſeconded by other ſhips, floating batteries, and ſome heavy cannon on *Cop's Hill*, on the Boſton ſide, which the Americans bore with a good degree of firmneſs, and continued at their work. The Britiſh army in Boſton were greatly alarmed at this near approach, and immediately reſolved on an attack, before the works could be completed. A detachment was formed for the purpoſe, conſiſting of ten companies of Grenadiers, ten of Light Infantry, and the 5th, 38th, 43d, and 52d regiments, and a corps of Artillery under the command of Maj. Gen. Howe, and Brig. Gen. Pigot. In the afternoon they landed on Charleſtown Point without oppoſition, where they were afterwards reinforced by the 47th regiment, and firſt battalion of marines. The

regiments

regiments in Cambridge camp were ordered down to ſupport the detachment at Charleſtown, and to occupy other poſts thought to be eſſential, and contiguous thereto. The Britiſh began their attack with a ſevere fire of artillery, and advanced in a ſlow and regular pace. The Americans who had marched on to the aid of the detachment, conſiſting of the New-Hampſhire, Maſſachuſetts and Connecticut troops, haſtily formed a line of defence, compoſed of rails and other materials found neareſt at hand. This line extended down towards the low ground on the left, and was nobly defended. The Americans reſerved their fire until the Britiſh came very near, when they gave it to great effect; it ſtaggered, and even broke them, but they rallied, and returning to the charge again and again, drove the Americans from the lines on the left of the redoubt, and had nearly ſurrounded it, when the Americans ruſhed out of the redoubt, their ammunition being expended, and made their retreat, even through a part of the Britiſh forces. About this time Maj. Gen. *Warren*, who had been but a few days before commiſſioned, and was then on the hill as a ſpectator only, was killed. A number of the Americans were killed in retreating from Breed's Hill, to Bunker Hill, and ſome in paſſing off over the neck. Perhaps there never was a better fought battle than this, all things conſidered; and too much praiſe can never be beſtowed on the conduct of Col. *William Preſcott*, who, notwithſtanding any thing that may have been ſaid, *was the proper commanding officer*, at the redoubt, and nobly acted his part as ſuch, during the whole action.

Juſt before the action began, Gen. Putnam came to the redoubt, and told Col. Preſcott that the entrenching tools muſt be ſent off, or they would be loſt; the Colonel replied, that if he ſent any of the men

men away with the tools, not one of them would return; to this the General anſwered, they ſhall every man return. A large party was then ſent off with the tools, and not one of them returned; in this inſtance the Colonel was the beſt judge of human nature.

In the time of action, Col. Preſcott obſerving that the brave Gen. Warren was near the works, he immediately ſtepped up to him, and aſked him if he had any orders to give him. The General replied that he had none, that he exerciſed no command there—"*The command*," ſaid the General, "*is yours*."

While many officers and ſoldiers gallantly diſtinguiſhed themſelves in this action, others were blamed, and ſome were brought to trial by court-martial. This was a ſore battle to the Britiſh, who did not forget it, during ſeveral campaigns, nor until a tide of ſucceſſes in their favour had removed it from their minds. Their whole force on this day, which was in action, was ſuppoſed to be about 2,000, and their whole loſs, in killed and wounded, was ſaid to be upwards of 1,000, of whom 226 were killed, and of theſe, 19 were commiſſioned officers, including one Lieutenant-Colonel, two Majors, and ſeven Captains. Another account ſtated their killed and wounded to be 753 privates, 202 ſerjeants and corporals, and 92 commiſſioned officers; in the whole, 1047. The loſs of the Americans, in killed, wounded, and priſoners, about 450.

At the time the Britiſh made their attack, the houſes in Charleſtown were ſet on fire, and burnt moſt furiouſly, which increaſed the horrors of the ſcene. At the ſame time a furious cannonade and throwing of ſhells took place at the lines on Boſton neck, againſt Roxbury, with intent to burn that town; but although ſeveral ſhells fell among the houſes, and ſome carcaſſes near them, and balls went through

through ſome; no other damage was ſuſtained than the loſs of one man killed by a ſhot driving a ſtone from a wall againſt him.

On the 15th, Congreſs appointed GEORGE WASHINGTON Commander in Chief; and on the 17th Artemas Ward, firſt Major-General—Charles Lee, ſecond Major-General—Horatio Gates, Adjutant-General, with the rank of Brigadier-General; and on the 19th, Philip Schuyler, third Major-General, and Iſrael Putnam, fourth Major-General; and on the 22d, Seth Pomeroy, firſt Brigadier-General—Richard Montgomery, ſecond do. David Wooſter, third do. William Heath, fourth do. Joſeph Spencer, fifth do. John Thomas, ſixth do. John Sullivan, ſeventh do. Nathaniel Green, eighth do. and made proviſion for raiſing an army for the defence of the United Colonies. Before theſe appointments were made known at camp, on the 21ſt of June, our General received from the Provincial Congreſs, a commiſſion of Major-General. Generals Ward, Thomas, and Warren, had before received their commiſſions, the latter juſt before he was ſlain. Gen. Pomeroy declining an acceptance of the commiſſion from Congreſs, that Honorable Body, on the 19th of July, reſolved that Gen. Thomas be appointed firſt Brigadier-General in the army of the United Colonies, in the room of Gen. Pomeroy, who never acted under the commiſſion ſent to him, and that Gen. Thomas's commiſſion bear the ſame date that Gen. Pomeroy's did; indeed this was the rank to which Gen. Thomas was entitled by former ſtanding. Congreſs now alſo appointed Joſeph Trumbull to be Commiſſary-General of ſtores and proviſions, for the army, but left the appointment of a Quarter-Maſter-General, and ſome other officers, to Gen. Waſhington, who appointed the able and very active Col. Thomas Mifflin, Quarter-Maſter-General, who

who did himself much honour, and his country service, in this important department.

Immediately after the battle of Bunker Hill, the Americans began to erect works on Prospect Hill, a very commanding height above Charlestown common, and at several other places. Several works were also constructed at Roxbury, and the British confined to Boston and Charlestown, within the neck.

The works now going on, both on the Cambridge and Roxbury side, were considerable, and there was a great want of engineers. Col. Gridley was chief Engineer, and was aided by his son. But the strength of body, activity and genius of the Americans capable of constructing with surprising dispatch any works in which they were guided, called for many instructors in this department. Lieut. Col. Rufus Putnam, of Col. David Brewer's regiment, was very serviceable in this line, on the Roxbury side; as was also Capt. Josiah Waters of Boston, and Capt. Baldwin of Brookfield, (afterwards Colonel of Artificers) and others on the Cambridge side, and Capt. Henry Knox, who had been an officer in the Boston Grenadier Company, (and who was afterwards at the head of the American artillery, to the close of the war) occasionally lent his aid. His military genius and acquaintance with our General, led him to be importunate with Capt. Knox to join the army; nor did he need persuasion to join in the cause of his country. His removal out of Boston, and the then state of his domestic concerns, required some previous arrangement; as soon as this was effected, he joined the army.

24th.—About noon, a heavy cannonade and throwing of shells from the lines on Boston neck into Roxbury—but no damage done. Two American soldiers attempting to set fire to Brown's barn,

on

on Boſton neck, were killed by the Britiſh. The ſame evening two heavy cannon were brought to the work on the hill above Roxbury work-houſe.

25th.—At night, an attempt was made to burn the buildings on Boſton neck; a firing took place between the parties, but the object was not effected.

26th.—A party of Britiſh, about day-break, advanced and fired on the American centinels near the George tavern. The picket turned out—the Britiſh retreated.

July 1ſt.—A platform in the work above Roxbury work-houſe being laid, a 24 pounder was mounted and diſcharged twice at the Britiſh lines; the ſecond ſhot grazed the parapet and ſtruck on the parade, and occaſioned ſome confuſion: There was more or leſs firing of cannon on both ſides, daily: All the works were puſhed with the utmoſt diligence.

2d.—About two o'clock, P. M. Gen. WASHINGTON, attended by ſeveral officers, arrived at the camp in Cambridge.

On the morning of this day, the Britiſh cannonaded briſkly from their lines on Boſton neck againſt Roxbury, and threw ſome ſhells; a carcaſs ſet fire to the houſe of Mr. Williams, the tinman, which was burnt down; by the activity of the troops, the flames were prevented from ſpreading further, although they had to work in the face of a conſtant and heavy fire from the enemy.

5th.—Gen. Waſhington, accompanied by Major-Gen. Lee, viſited the Roxbury camp, works, &c.

8th.—A little after two o'clock in the morning, a number of volunteers, under the command of Majors *Tupper* and *Crane*, attacked the Britiſh advance guard at Brown's houſe, on Boſton neck, and routed them, took a halbert, a muſket, and two bayonets, and burnt the two houſes; the ſtore and

barn

barn escaped the flames; a scattering fire at the outpost continued for some time; a floating battery was brought up into the bay, and moored so as to cover the right flank of the British works on the neck.

11th.—In the morning, a party of Americans drove back the British advance guard, and burnt Brown's store. The same night a detachment went on to Long-Island, and brought off the stock, &c. The next day in the forenoon, Col. Greaton with 136 men, went on to Long-Island, and burnt the barns; the flames communicated to the house, and all were consumed. An armed schooner, and several barges put off after the Americans, and some of the ships of war near the island, cannonaded them. The detachment made their way for the shore, and narrowly escaped being taken. One man on the shore who came to the assistance of the detachment, was killed: It was supposed that several of the British were killed and wounded. The same day six transports, appearing to be full of men, arrived in Boston harbour.

13th.—A heavy cannonade from the British, at the American workmen—but no damage done. Gen. Washington visited the camp. The men were employed on the works going on upon the strong rocky hill, (Col. Williams's) to the south-west of those above Roxbury work-house. This was one of the strongest works which were erected.

14th.—The British fired several cannon, and a Connecticut soldier was killed in the street, near the George tavern. The shot entered his body, drove it some distance, and lodged in him, in a remarkable manner.

18th.—Five transport ships arrived in Boston harbour. Fresh provisions were very scarce and dear, in Boston—mutton and veal, 2*s.* per pound; fresh beef and pork a pistareen, salt pork sixpence.

20th.

20th.—A day of public faſting—no fatigue—all ſtill and quiet.

21ſt.—Major Voſe returned from Nantaſket. The detachment under his command, brought off 1,000 buſhels of barley, all the hay, &c.—went to Light-Houſe Iſland; took away the lamps, oil, ſome gunpowder, the boats, &c. and burnt the wooden parts of the light-houſe. An armed ſchooner and ſeveral boats, with men, engaged the detachment; of the Americans, two were wounded.

22d.—A general order came out for forming the army into diviſions and brigades.

25th.—Maj. Gen. Ward removed from Cambridge, and took the immediate command of the troops at Roxbury.

29th.—The Britiſh formed a bomb battery, at Bunker's-Hill, and advanced their advance guard.

30th.—In the morning, there was a ſkirmiſh at Charleſtown neck, between the riflemen and ſome Britiſh troops. Two of the latter were taken priſoners, and ſeveral were killed. Of the riflemen, one was killed. The ſame day, the Britiſh advanced over the neck, and threw up a ſlight work to cover their guard.

31ſt.—A little before one o'clock, A. M. a Britiſh floating-battery came up the river, within 300 yards of Sewall's Point, and fired a number of ſhot at the American works, on both ſides of the river. At the ſame time, the Britiſh, on Boſton neck, ſallied towards Roxbury; drove in the American centinels, ſet fire to the George tavern, and returned to their works. The ſame morning, Major Tupper, with 300 Americans, went to Light Houſe Iſland, attacked a Britiſh guard of 33 marines, killed a ſubaltern officer and ſeveral ſoldiers, took 23 priſoners, ſeveral refugees, and burnt all the buildings on the iſland, with the loſs of one American ſoldier. There

was a firing, during the day, from the Britiſh, at Charleſtown, at intervals. Two Americans were killed; an officer, and ſeveral Britiſh ſoldiers, were ſuppoſed to have been killed. The Americans took ſeveral muſkets.

Auguſt 2d.—There was a conſiderable firing between the advanced parties, and the Americans burnt a barn, near Charleſtown neck, in which the Britiſh had ſome hay. A Britiſh officer was wounded, and carried within their lines.

4th.—A ſhip of war came up above the ferry, at Charleſtown, and there took a ſtation.

6th.—In the afternoon, a party of the Britiſh, in two barges, covered by a floating battery, burnt the houſe on the other ſide of Penny Ferry.

11th.—One of the ſhips which had been ſtationed above the ferry, went down.

15th.—There was a ſmart cannonade on the Roxbury ſide. There was more or leſs firing every day; but little damage done.

17th.—A ſhot, from the Britiſh lines on Boſton neck, ſtruck among the main guard, at Roxbury, and damaged two muſkets in a very remarkable manner; but did no other harm. The ſame day ſix or ſeven tons of powder arrived from the ſouthward.

18th.—Several ſhells were thrown into Roxbury; but did no damage.

26th. The Americans broke ground on Plowed Hill, in front of Bunker's Hill, without moleſtation.

27th.—There was a briſk cannonade from the Britiſh on Bunker's Hill, the ſhip, and floating batteries, at the Americans on Plowed Hill. Adjutant Mumford, of Col. Varnum's Rhode-Iſland regiment, and a ſoldier, belonging to Col. Hitchcock's regiment, were killed, and a rifleman loſt a leg.

28th.

28th.—In the night the camp was alarmed, and ſome of the troops turned out, but nothing enſued. The fire continued againſt Plowed Hill; one American was killed and ſeveral wounded.

29th, 30th, and 31ſt.—The Britiſh continued their cannonade and bombardment of Plowed Hill. One ſhell fell within the works; but no damage was done.

September 1ſt.—The preceding night there was an exceſſive hot cannonade and bombardment from the Britiſh works, on Boſton neck, againſt the works at Roxbury. Two Americans were killed, and ſeveral wounded.

2d.—The Britiſh threw up a ſlight work on Boſton neck, advanced of their lines, to cover their guard. Cannonading and throwing of ſhells, on this day, both againſt Roxbury and Plowed Hill. Two ſhells fell into the works on the latter, but did no harm.

5th.—A ſerjeant, belonging to the 64th Britiſh regiment, and a ſeaman, were taken priſoners at Noddle's Iſland. The heavy rains, about this time, did ſome damage to the American works. Preparations were made for ſending a detachment to Canada.

6th.—The Americans advanced ſome works towards Boſton neck, without moleſtation.

9th.—Two riflemen deſerted to the Britiſh. A number of Britiſh ſoldiers, at different times, had come over to the Americans.

10th.—A ſtrong work, at Lamb's Dam, in Roxbury, was completed, and mounted with four 18 pounders. The ſame day, a ſhot from the Britiſh deſtroyed three muſkets at Roxbury.

11th.—A boat, with ſix or ſeven Britiſh ſoldiers, was driven on ſhore at Dorcheſter. They were taken priſoners and ſent in.

13th.—A detachment, under the command of Col. Arnold, marched for Canada. They were to take

take a north-eaſtern rout, up Kennebeck River, and down the river Chaudiere.

Generals Schuyler and Montgomery were making their way into Canada, with a conſiderable force, by way of the lakes. They had advanced as far as Fort St. John's; but, finding that this fort would make conſiderable reſiſtance, they fell back. Schuyler returned to Albany, to hold a treaty with the Indians; and Montgomery waited for the arrival of his artillery, that he might reduce the forts.

Some time before this, Col. Ethan Allen, of the New-Hampſhire Grants, (ſince Vermont) with a number of volunteers, took poſſeſſion of Ticonderoga. The artillery, ſecured by Allen, were an acquiſition to the Americans; and Col. Knox went up the next winter, and ſelected and brought forward a number of pieces to the camp, before Boſton. The garriſon of this place, which was commanded by a Captain, apprehending no danger, were negligent, and remiſs in duty. Allen was acquainted at the place; and now, as is ſaid, requeſted a part of the garriſon to aid him, in tranſporting ſome goods. Nearly half of the garriſon were granted him. Theſe were plentifully ſerved with liquor; and, in the night, Allen entered the fort, and demanded a delivery of it. The commandant aſking by what authority he required him to ſurrender, Allen replied—"I demand it in the name of the great Jehovah and the Continental Congreſs." He alſo took poſſeſſion of Crown-Point; and, before Montgomery was ready to proceed againſt the Forts Chambly and St. John's, Allen determined to ſurpriſe Montreal. For this purpoſe, he marched acroſs, with a body of militia; but he was met, before he got to the town, by what force the Britiſh could collect there, who attacked and defeated Allen, taking him, and a number of his party, priſoners.

He

He was put in irons, and ſent in a man-of-war to England. His narrative was long ſince publiſhed.

18th.—Several ſeamen deſerted from the Britiſh—they brought off three boats. The ſame day, a cannon ſhot, from the lines on Boſton neck, went through the guard-houſe at Roxbury. A ſplinter wounded the Captain of the guard.

21ſt.—The cannonade, which continued more or leſs every day, was more briſk at ſome workmen, between Plowed Hill and Proſpect Hill. Two Americans were wounded.

23d.—A briſk cannonade and bombardment on the works at Roxbury—108 cannon and mortars were diſcharged, but no damage done.

29th.—500,000 dollars, in Continental bills, were brought to Head-Quarters, from Philadelphia. Several deſerters from the Britiſh, about this time.

October 3d and 4th.—General Officers in council, on the ſuppoſed treachery of Dr. Church, who was taken into cloſe cuſtody, and afterward kept in confinement.

6th.—A briſk cannonade at Roxbury. An American loſt an arm. An 18 pound ſhot went through the gate-way, at the Britiſh lines, as their guard was marching out.

8th.—The Britiſh did ſome miſchief at Briſtol, in Rhode-Iſland. The report of the cannon were heard at camp.

17th.—Two American floating-batteries were rowed down the river; ſeveral ſhot were diſcharged towards the Britiſh. A 9 pounder burſt, and 5 or 6 men were wounded; one of which died ſoon after.

22d.—Intelligence was received, that ſome Britiſh ſhips had entered the harbour of Caſco Bay, and burnt a part of the town of Falmouth.

November

November 4th.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh fort at Chambly, on the lake, had ſurrendered to the Americans. The artillery and military ſtores in this fort were truly an acquiſition. The privateers fitted out by the Americans, about this time, began to ſend in a few prizes.

9th.—At the top of high water, the tide being very full, ſome Britiſh light-infantry, in boats, came over from Boſton, and landed on Leechmore's Point. The centinels on the point came off; the alarm was given; and ſeveral hundred Americans forded over the cauſeway, in the face of the Britiſh, the water at leaſt two feet deep. The Britiſh, ſeeing the ſpirit of the Americans, although they were very advantageouſly poſted, made a precipitate retreat to their boats. Three or four Americans were wounded, one mortally. The Britiſh ſhip and floating-batteries kept up a briſk fire; but to little purpoſe.

11th.—The King of England's Proclamation for ſuppreſſing rebellion (as he called it) made its appearance. It was taken on board a veſſel from Ireland, which was captured by an American cruiſer. It was reported that the Britiſh had received a reinforcement.

14th.—Intelligence was received of the capitulation of the Britiſh garriſon of Fort St. John's on the lake. Montgomery was now proceeding rapidly into Canada. His troops took poſſeſſion of Montreal on the 13th.

16th.—Several deſerters came in, and two ſoldiers were taken priſoners.

22d.—A ſtrong detachment from the army, under the command of Maj. Gen. Putnam, broke ground on Cobble Hill, without annoyance. The fatigue-men worked until near break of day, when the whole came off.

23d.—At night, our General, with a detachment of ſimilar ſtrength to that of the preceding night, were

were ordered to Cobble Hill, to complete the works. A ſally from the Britiſh was expected, and Col. Bridge with his regiment was ordered to the foot of the hill, and to patrole towards the bay and neck, conſtantly, during the night. The picket at Proſpect Hill was alſo ordered to be in readineſs to ſuccour the troops at the works, if they were attacked; and Col. Bond's regiment alſo lay on their arms; but the Britiſh did not move. Two of the Britiſh centinels came off in the night to the detachment; the whole came off at day-break; and other troops were ordered on the works, in the day time, now in good forwardneſs, and defenſible.

25th.—An additional ſhip came up and took ſtation at the ferry. Upon a few ſhot being fired, by the American advance centinels, the Britiſh drums on Bunker's Hill beat to arms, which were followed by the Americans. At this time the Britiſh were erecting ſeveral bomb-batteries at Boſton to annoy the Americans. Col. Enos, who was of Col. Arnold's detachment, from the army deſtined to croſs the woods by a north-eaſtern route into Canada, having proceeded a very conſiderable diſtance, Arnold's ſick returning back, and his own men growing ſickly, returned with his part of the detachment. This leſſened the expectation of ſucceſs to the American army in Canada.

30th.—Intelligence was received from Cape-Ann, that a veſſel from England, laden with warlike ſtores, had been taken and brought into that place. There was on board one 13 inch braſs mortar, 2,000 ſtand of arms, 100,000 flints, 32 tons of leaden ball, &c. &c. A fortunate capture for the Americans!

December 2d.—The braſs 13 inch mortar, and ſundry military ſtores, taken in the ordnance prize, were brought to camp.

5th.—Intelligence was received, that Col. Arnold had made his way ſafely into Canada.

12th.

12th.—A cauſeway was begun over the marſh, to Leechmore's Point. Two 18 pounders were brought from Roxbury, and mounted at Cobble Hill.

13th.—An expreſs arrived from Marblehead, with advice that three Britiſh men-of-war were ſtanding for that harbour. Col. Glover's regiment, with Capt. Forſter's company of artillery, and a company of riflemen, were ordered to march to Marblehead with all expedition.

14th, 15th, and 16th.—Approaches were carried briſkly on to Leechmore's Point, and nearly to the top of the hill.

17th.—The morning was foggy. A detachment of 300 men, under the direction of Gen. Putnam, broke ground on the top of the hill, on Leechmore's Point, at a diſtance of not more than half a mile from the ſhip. Between twelve and one o'clock, the fog cleared away, and the ſhip began to cannonade the Americans, with round and grape ſhot, and ſome ſhells were thrown from Weſt-Boſton. One ſoldier was wounded, and the party driven from the works. Several cannon were fired from Cobble Hill, at the ſhip; one ſhot was ſuppoſed to have ſtruck her.

18th.—Our General was ordered, with 300 men, to proſecute the work begun on Leechmore's Point. It was expected that this would have been a bloody day, and Dr. Downer, one of the ſurgeons, was ordered down with the detachment, with his inſtruments, &c. to aſſiſt the wounded. Fortunately for the detachment, Capt. Smith of the artillery, had, in the morning, diſcharged an 18 pounder from Cobble Hill at the ſhip, which induced her to weigh anchor, and run below the ferry-way.

When our General arrived nearly at the ſummit of the hill, he halted the detachment, and went forward himſelf, and took a view of the ſtate of the works, which in ſome places were but juſt begun;

in

in others were carried half way up. He then ordered the front company to move up the hill, ground their arms, and move into a part of the works assigned to them—and so on through the whole, to prevent confusion in entering the works, and thereby increasing an object to the British gunners. As soon as the men were placed in the works, two centinels were posted to watch the British batteries, with orders, on discovering the discharge of cannon, to call out, *a shot!* The men in the works were ordered to be steady; on the signal of a shot, to settle down and remain so, until the shot had struck; or if a shell, until it had burst; then to rise and prosecute the work—no man to step out of his place. In a very short time, a shot was cried by the centinels. It proved to be a shell, which fell and burst within a few feet of a part of the workmen, throwing the dirt among them, and a piece of the shell hitting a soldier's hat. On the second discharge, the men fell as before; when, on rising, two or three heavy cannon-shot struck in the face of the work; the British having discharged the cannon in such time after the mortar, as that the shot might take effect just as the men arose after the bursting of the shell: but in this they did not succeed; the men being ordered to keep down until both had struck. Finding this deception to fail, a shell was broke in the air, directly over the party, at 60 or 70 feet high. This also had as little effect upon the Americans. The fire continued until the afternoon, when it ceased: and it was afterwards learnt, that the commanding-officer of the British artillery, who stood and observed the effect of their fire upon the Americans, went to their General, and informed him, that from his own observation, their fire had no other effect than to inure the Americans to danger, and advised its discontinuance. In the afternoon, Gen. Washington and sev-

eral other General Officers came on to the Point. Towards night, the detachment were ordered to move out of the works by companies, as they went in; take up their arms, move under the hill, and form the detachment; from whence it was marched to Cambridge, attended by their ſurgeon, who had been in waiting all the day, but had no occaſion to draw his inſtruments from their caſe, or a bandage or dreſſing from his box.

19th.—The proſecution of the works on Leechmore's Point was continued. The Britiſh cannonaded and bombarded the new detachment; but to no effect. The ſame took place on the 20th. On this day, a 13 inch ſhell was thrown almoſt up to No. 2. It was probably thrown, either at the works before mentioned, or at the colleges. It did not burſt. Nearly five pounds of powder was taken out of the ſhell.

22d.—The Britiſh threw one ſhell, and fired two ſhot, from Bunker's Hill in Charleſtown, at the works on Leechmore's Point. The cannonade, &c. continued, on the 23d and 24th; but to no effect.

28th.—A ſtrong detachment from Winter Hill marched, in the night, to ſurpriſe the Britiſh outpoſts in Charleſtown. They paſſed on the ſouth ſide of Cobble Hill, and were to croſs the cove on the ice. When they came to the channel, it was found to be open. A ſoldier ſlipping down on the ice, his piece accidentally went off, which cauſed an alarm, and the detachment returned.

31ſt.—Intelligence was received, that there had been an action at Norfolk in Virginia, between Dunmore's army and the Virginians, to the advantage of the latter. Fifty of the regular toops were ſaid to have been killed and wounded; among the former was Capt. *Fordyce*, of the 14th Britiſh regiment, an active and good officer. The Virginians had

not

not a man killed. Dunmore's force was ſuppoſed to be about 500.

January 1ſt, 1776, preſented a great change in the American army. The officers and men of the new regiments were joining their reſpective corps; thoſe of the old regiments were going home by hundreds and by thouſands. The beſt arms, ſuch as were fit for ſervice, were detained from the ſoldiers who were going home; they were to be paid for; but it created much uneaſineſs. Such a change, in the very teeth of an enemy, is a moſt delicate manœuvre; but the Britiſh did not attempt to take any advantage of it.

8th.—It having been thought expedient to deprive the Britiſh of the houſes in Charleſtown, below Bunker's Hill, a detachment was ordered for the purpoſe. One hundred men from the Firſt Brigade, and a like number from Frye's Brigade, with Captains Williams, Gould and Wyman; Lieutenants Foſter, Shaw, Patterſon and Trafton, and Enſign Cheney; the whole under the command of Major Knoulton, aided by Brigade-Majors Henly and Carey. The detachment marched between 8 and 9 o'clock in the evening, and the object was effected without the loſs of a man. Several Britiſh ſoldiers were taken priſoners. The garriſon of Bunker Hill works commenced a briſk fire down the hill, towards the houſes; but no damage was ſuſtained. There had been a number of deſerters from the Britiſh, ſince thoſe heretofore mentioned.

17th.—Intelligence was received, that on the 31ſt of December, at three o'clock, A. M. Gen. Montgomery made an attempt to carry Quebec by aſſault. Col. Arnold had entered the lower city, and Gen. Montgomery was aſcending the barriers at the other end, when he was killed by a muſket-ball, as was his Aid-de-camp. A number of thoſe who had entered

entered the lower city, were killed or taken prisoners, and the enterprise defeated. No account of the American loss was at this time reported.

Great address and gallantry were exhibited on this expedition. The Americans ascending Kennebeck river, crossing the height of land, and descending into Canada, was an arduous undertaking. Montgomery was fired with a noble ardor. He had been successful hitherto, and the reduction of the city of Quebec would have been the finishing stroke. With this he hoped to close the year. To reduce the city by siege, would require a long time, (if not relieved) nor had he a train of artillery for the purpose. With this day would expire the time of service of many of his troops. He therefore resolved to attempt to carry the place by assault. Two real attacks were to be made on the lower city, at the opposite ends; one guided by himself, the other by Arnold; and there were to be two false attacks made on the upper city, to divide and distract the enemy. Every thing was well arranged. Arnold forced his way in, was wounded, and carried away—his party fighting on. Montgomery passed along a very narrow defile, next to the bank, to a barrier obstinately defended; and here he fell—here was an end to his attack. The other party fought on; but these being now the only enemy to oppose, the British turned their whole force to that quarter. They could not well retreat: the whole were killed, wounded, or taken prisoners. There was here barely a prospect of success, unless fortune should prove more favourable to merit than she is wont to do. Nothing more could be done on the score of gallantry. How far the attempt was a prudent one, is another question. It is a military maxim, that "fortune may fail us, but a prudent conduct never will." At the same time, some of the most brilliant victories have been obtained by a daring stroke.

18th.

18th.—Col. Knox, of the artillery, came to camp. He brought from Ticonderoga a fine train of artillery, which had been taken from the Britiſh, both cannon and mortars, and which were ordered to be ſtopped at Framingham.

22d.—Several Indians came to camp from the weſtward. Intelligence was received from Canada, that the blockade of Quebec was continued, notwithſtanding the rebuff on the morning of the 31ſt of December.

February 1ſt.—A number of Britiſh ſoldiers from Bunker's Hill, went to pulling down the tide-mill at Charleſtown. A cannon was diſcharged at them from Cobble Hill, which diſperſed them for a ſhort time, but they returned again.

5th.—Three cows were feeding near the Britiſh out-poſt at Charleſtown neck. A party of the Britiſh came out, got above them, drove them to the neck, and killed them. This brought on a briſk firing at the out-poſts, and ſome cannon were diſcharged from Bunker's Hill. It was ſuppoſed that the Britiſh had one man killed, and one wounded.

8th.—At night, a party of Americans, from Winter Hill, went down and burnt the old tide-mill in Charleſtown.

14th.—In the morning, a party of Britiſh troops from the Caſtle, and another from Boſton, croſſed over to Dorcheſter neck, with intent to ſurpriſe the American guard, which they came well nigh effecting; the guard but juſt eſcaping them. There was but one muſket fired, on the ſide of the Americans. An old inhabitant and his ſon were taken priſoners. The Britiſh burnt the houſes on the point, and then returned.

15th.—Intelligence was received from Canada, that ſome of the Britiſh garriſon of Quebec, having made a ſally, in order to get fuel, they were driven back,

back, with the loſs of twelve killed, and fifteen wounded.

The heights round Boſton, *except thoſe at Dorcheſter*, having been taken poſſeſſion of, it was now determined that theſe alſo ſhould be occupied; and great previous preparation was made for the purpoſe. It was imagined that ſo near an approach to the Britiſh, would induce them to make a ſally, to diſlodge the Americans. It was therefore deliberated in Council, that, in caſe the Britiſh ſhould come forth, a ſtrong detachment of Americans, from the Cambridge camp, in *boats*, ſhould proceed down the river, and land at the bottom of the common, in Boſton. To this our General made a moſt pointed oppoſition; alleging, that it would moſt aſſuredly produce only defeat and diſgrace to the American army; that the Britiſh General muſt be ſuppoſed to be a maſter of his profeſſion; that as ſuch, he would firſt provide for the defence of the town, in every part, which was the great depoſit of all his ſtores; that when this was done, if his troops would afford a redundancy, ſufficient for a ſally, he might attempt it; but it was to be remembered that, at any rate, the town would be defended; that it was impoſſible for troops, armed and diſciplined as the Americans then were, to be puſhed down in boats, at leaſt one mile and a half, open to the fire of all the Britiſh batteries on the weſt ſide of the town, and to their whole park of artillery, which might be drawn to the bottom of the common long before the Americans could reach it, and be flanked alſo by the works on the neck; that under ſuch a tremendous fire, the troops could not effect a landing; and that he would never give his vote for it. It was however carried, that the attempt ſhould be made.

18th.—It being Lord's day, after public ſervice, a proclamation from the General Aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts,

chuſetts, for the reformation of manners, was read to the firſt diviſion by the Rev. Mr. Leonard.

21ſt.—A picket of 60 men was ordered to Leechmore's Point; and Col. Sargent's regiment at Inman's farm was ordered to be in readineſs to ſupport them, in caſe they ſhould be attacked by the Britiſh; as ſome grounds for ſuſpecting it had been diſcovered.

23d.—Enſign Lyman, of Huntington's regiment, with a ſmall party, took a Corporal and two men, who were centinels at Brown's chimneys, on Boſton neck, without firing a gun. Theſe priſoners reported, that the heavy cannon were removed from Bunker's Hill, and put on board ſhip.

25th.—Some heavy cannon were mounted on the works at Leechmore's Point. The ſame day the Britiſh were buſily employed in erecting a work, a little to the north of the powder magazine in Boſton.

29th.—The Britiſh threw ſome ſhells to Leechmore's Point.

March 1ſt.—Several mortars were ſent over to Roxbury, and great preparations made to annoy the enemy. Bundles of ſcrewed hay were brought from Chelſea, to be uſed in the works.

2d.—At night, a cannonade and bombardment began at the American works, on Cobble Hill and Leechmore's Point on the Cambridge ſide, and at Lamb's Dam on the Roxbury ſide, againſt the Britiſh works; and a number of ſhells were thrown into Boſton. The Britiſh returned the fire, and threw out a number of ſhells; one of which, of 13 inches, reached Proſpect Hill. One of the American mortars of 13 inches, and two of 10 inches, were burſt. They were not properly bedded, as the ground was hard frozen.

4th.—There was an almoſt inceſſant roar of cannon and mortars during the night, on both ſides.

The

The Americans took poſſeſſion of Dorcheſter heights, and nearly completed their works on both the hills by morning. Perhaps there never was ſo much work done in ſo ſhort a ſpace of time. The adjoining orchards were cut down to make the abbattis; and a very curious and novel mode of defence was added to theſe works. The hills on which they were erected were ſteep, and clear of trees and buſhes. Rows of barrels, filled with earth, were placed round the works. They preſented only the appearance of ſtrengthening the works; but the real deſign was, in caſe the enemy made an attack, to have rolled them down the hill. They would have deſcended with ſuch increaſing velocity, as muſt have thrown the aſſailants into the utmoſt confuſion, and have killed and wounded great numbers. This project was ſuggeſted by Mr. *William Davis*, merchant, of Boſton, to our General, who immediately communicated it to the Commander in Chief, who highly approved of it, as did all the other officers: But the credit of it is juſtly due to Mr. *Davis*, and to him the writer gives it. As the regiments at Roxbury were parading, in the afternoon of this day, to march to Dorcheſter, a ſhot, from the Britiſh lines on Boſton neck, carried away a thigh of Lieut. John Mayo, of Learned's regiment: he ſoon after died. One man was killed by a ſhell at Leechmore's Point, in the night.

5th.—The Britiſh, it was expected, would attempt to diſlodge the Americans from Dorcheſter heights. Signals had been prepared at Roxbury meeting-houſe to mark the moment. The detachment at Cambridge (deſigned to puſh into Boſton in the boats) was paraded, not far from No. 2, where it remained a good part of the day. But kind Heaven, which more than once ſaved the Americans when they would have deſtroyed themſelves, did not allow the

ſignals

ſignals to be made. About 3500 of the Britiſh troops, it was ſaid, had been ſent down to the Caſtle, with the intent to have made an attack on the Americans; but, about midnight, the wind blew almoſt a hurricane from the ſouth; many windows were forced in, ſheds and fences blown down, and ſome veſſels drove on ſhore; and no attempt was made on the works. *Some* were ready to blame our General, for the ſentiments which he expreſſed againſt the going into Boſton, as was propoſed, in the boats, and attributed it to the want of firmneſs: But the opinion of every *military* man, ſince that time, whether *American*, *French*, or *Britiſh*, who have taken a view of the land and water which was to have been the ſcene of action, with the concomitant circumſtances, (as far as we have heard) hath been coincident; and thoſe who may in future review them, will for themſelves determine, whether the *independence of ſpirit and ſentiments* of our General, expreſſed on the occaſion, merited *applauſe* or *cenſure*: For himſelf, he has been frequently heard to ſay that he *gloried in them*.

On the night of the 7th, Capt. Erving made his eſcape out of Boſton. He reported, that the Britiſh were preparing to leave the town; that they were putting their cannon, mortars, ſhot, ſhells, &c. on board the ſtore-ſhips; that ſome of the ſhot and ſhells, ſent into the town by the Americans, had been well directed.

9th.—The Americans at Dorcheſter neck opened a battery to the north-eaſt of Bird's Hill, near the water, with the intent to annoy the Britiſh ſhipping. This night a ſtrong detachment went down to open a work on Nook Hill in Dorcheſter, ſtill nearer to Boſton. Some of the men imprudently kindled a fire behind the hill, previous to the hour for breaking of ground. The enemy diſcovered the light

of the fire; and there was, during the evening and night, a continual roar of cannon and mortars, from the Caſtle and lines on Boſton neck, ſouth end of that town; as well as from the Americans at Roxbury, Cobble Hill, and Leechmore's Point, at Cambridge. The ſecond ſhot from the Britiſh at the old fortification, ſouth end of the town of Boſton, killed 4 Americans, who were ſtanding around the fire before mentioned, at Nook Hill; one of whom was Dr. Dow, of Connecticut. Another man was killed at the point next to the Caſtle. This ſuſpended the work for the night, during which more than 800 ſhot were fired.

10th.—The cannonade continued. The Britiſh were putting their cannon, military ſtores, and baggage, on board the ſtore-ſhips and tranſports. This evening two pieces of cannon, and two ſmall mortars, were carried on to Noddle's Iſland, to diſturb the Britiſh ſhipping; but the enemy being quiet at their different works, they were not moleſted from that quarter.

11th.—In the evening there was a briſk cannonade from the Britiſh, at the ſouth end of Boſton, and the lines on the neck.

12th.—A Mr. Woodward came out of Boſton. He reported that the Britiſh were making the greateſt preparations to leave the town; that a number of gun-carriages, ammunition-waggons, &c. had been broken to pieces, and thrown off the wharves; that ſome furniture had been deſtroyed, and that many dry goods had been ſeized, &c.

13th.—Six regiments of the American army, viz. Greaton's, Stark's, Patterſon's, Bond's, Webb's, and the rifle regiment, were put under orders to march for New-York; of theſe our General was to take the command. A detachment of artillery was alſo ordered to march with this brigade.

On

On the evening of the 15th, a fire broke out in Patterſon's barracks at Cambridge, which conſumed ſix rooms, deſtroyed ſome muſket-cartridges, &c. This day the rifle regiment commenced their march for New-York.

17th.—In the morning the Britiſh evacuated Boſton; their rear guard, with ſome marks of precipitation. A number of cannon were left ſpiked, and two large marine mortars, which they in vain attempted to burſt. The garriſon at Bunker's Hill practiſed ſome deception to cover their retreat. They fixed ſome images, repreſenting men, in the places of their centinels, with muſkets placed on their ſhoulders, &c. Their immoveable poſition led to the diſcovery of the deception, and a detachment of the Americans marched in and took poſſeſſion. The troops on the Roxbury ſide, moved over the neck and took poſſeſſion of Boſton; as did others from Cambridge, in boats. On the Americans entering the town, the inhabitants diſcovered joy inexpreſſible. The town had been much injured in its buildings, and ſome individuals had been plundered. Some Britiſh ſtores were left. The Britiſh army went on board their tranſports below the Caſtle. A number of American adherents to them, and the Britiſh cauſe, went away with the army.

18th.—The brigade deſtined for New-York, marched from the vincinity of Boſton.

19th.—The Britiſh blew up Caſtle William, and burnt ſome of the barracks.

20th.—The Britiſh cannonaded, from the Caſtle, the Americans on Dorcheſter neck. The ſame morning our General left Roxbury for New-York. He reached Mendon, from whence, on the ſame evening, he obſerved the light in the air of the finiſhing ſtroke of burning the barracks, &c. at the Caſtle. The Britiſh deſtroyed the gun-carriages,

and

and knocked the trunnions off the cannon, and left them ſpiked. The cannon were afterwards drilled free, and mounted on a new conſtruction, in ſtocks, placed on carriages, and were thereby rendered ſerviceable.

22d.—Our General reached Norwich in Connecticut. The troops marched with great expedition; but by the badneſs of the roads, the froſt then coming out of the ground, the baggage-waggons moved heavily. The tranſports, deſtined for the troops, were fitting for ſea.

26th.—They fell down to New-London.

27th.—The troops were marched to that place, where they embarked, and came to ſail about noon.

30th.—They arrived at Turtle Bay, diſembarked, and marched into the city at noon. The tranſports fell down to the city wharves, and landed the baggage, &c. Gen. Thompſon and Lord Sterling, with ſome New-York and New-Jerſey troops, were in the city; and works were conſtructing, in and around the city, on Long-Iſland, and at Horn's Hook; the command of the whole devolved on our General. The Aſia, Britiſh man-of-war, then lay off in the harbour, with the Lady Gage, of 20 guns; but, on the arrival of the brigade, the Aſia moved further down, juſt out of ſhot. Our General put a ſtop to the intercourſe between the inhabitants and the ſhips, which had, until then, been kept up.

April 2d.—Major D'Hart, of the Jerſey troops, with 200 men, about midnight, made a deſcent on a ſmall iſland in the harbour, which the Britiſh had begun to fortify; burnt a building or two, took two muſkets, ſome entrenching tools, and came off. The Aſia fired ſeveral cannon, but did no harm.

On the evening of the 3d, Maj. Gen. Putnam arrived at New-York, to whom the command fell. About this

this time, a veſſel arrived from France, with a large quantity of gun-powder.

7th.—A barge from one of the ſhips going near Staten-Iſland, was fired upon by the Americans: two men were killed, the barge and 8 men taken. The Britiſh cannonaded the ſhore for ſome time, and one American was wounded.

9th.—Intelligence was received, that Commodore Hopkins had fallen in with the Britiſh frigate Glaſgow, a bomb brig, and two tenders, and after a ſmart engagement, took the brig and two tenders. The Glaſgow made off.

10th.—Gen. Sullivan's brigade arrived from the eaſtward.

12th.—There were 18 pieces of braſs cannon in the American park, at New-York, which were viewed with no ſmall degree of pride and wonder.

13th.—In the forenoon, Gen. Waſhington arrived in the city, attended by Gen. Gates and ſeveral other officers.

14th.—The Britiſh men-of-war were all out of the bay. The Aſia fell below the Narrows; the Phenix and others went out to ſea.

15th.—Four American regiments, viz. Poor's, Patterſon's, Greaton's, and Bond's, were ordered for Canada; Gen. Thompſon was to command them. Gen. Thomas had been, ſome time before, ſent from Boſton to command in Canada.

17th.—Gen. Greene's brigade arrived at New-York, as did a part of Spencer's. Mrs. Waſhington arrived the ſame day in the city.

21ſt.—The regiments deſtined for Canada, ſailed for Albany.

26th.—Six more regiments were ordered for Canada, viz. two from the Pennſylvania line, two from the New-Jerſey, and two from the New-Hampſhire.

27th.

27th.—Our General, having been inoculated with the ſmall-pox, went to Montreſos Iſland, where he went through the operation of that diſtemper.

May 8th.—An expreſs arrived from Boſton, with an account, that a number of Britiſh tranſports had arrived in Nantaſket Road, with troops on board. All the American regiments at New-York were ordered to hold themſelves in readineſs, to march at a moment's notice. Several ſoldiers were taken down with the ſmall-pox, and ſome of them died.

28th.—Our General having recovered from the ſmall-pox, which had been pretty ſevere, returned to the city, and took the command of his brigade; and was the next day General of the day.

31ſt.—A large ſhip and two tenders arrived at the Narrows. A great number of works were now conſtructing, and in good forwardneſs. A ſtrong work was raiſed at Paulus Hook, on the Jerſey ſide of the Hudſon.

June 4th.—A French veſſel, with Weſt-India goods, arrived in the harbour.

7th.—Intelligence was received, that two Philadelphia privateers had taken two rich Jamaicamen, laden with ſugars, &c. and ſome plate on board.

9th.—Unfavourable news was received from Canada. The ſmall-pox, which was raging in the American army, in that quarter, had carried off Gen. Thomas; and that Col. Beadle and Major Sherburne, with the detachments under their command, were taken priſoners, at or near a place called *The Cedars*. The army in New-York was now growing ſickly; and there was not a ſufficiency of hoſpital room, or of medicines.

14th.—Congreſs gave intimations, that General Howe, with the Britiſh army under his command, might be ſoon expected at New-York. Some perſons, ſuſpected of treacherous deſigns, were ſeized and confined.

15th.

15th.—Some intelligence, more favourable than the former, was received from Canada. The Canadians were friendly. Gen. Sullivan, who was now in that quarter, having gone from New-York, with the reinforcement heretofore mentioned, was fortifying; the enemy were advancing; but Gen. Thompſon was ſent out to oppoſe them. This, however, proved ineffectual; Thompſon was defeated and taken priſoner. A number of Scotch troops, with Col. Campbell, had been made priſoners, near Boſton harbour.

18th.—The Pennſylvania regiments, commanded by Colonels Shee and Magaw, were arriving in the city; they had the appearance of fine troops. The day before, Gen. Wooſter arrived from Canada.

20th.—Gen. Gates, who was made a Major-General, was to proceed immediately to Canada, where he was to take the command.

22d.—A plot was diſcovered in the city; it was to have burſt on the Commander in Chief, and others. The Mayor of the city was taken into cuſtody, as was a gun-ſmith; and ſome of the General's own guard, who were foreigners, were ſaid to be in the plot. The ſame day, more particulars were received from Boſton; that the troops at Boſton had driven the King's ſhips from the Lower Harbour, and taken ſeveral tranſports, with Scotch ſoldiers on board.

25th.—Two deſerters came in, from the Liverpool man-of-war. They reported, that the fleet from Halifax, with Gen. Howe's army, were hourly expected to arrive at New-York. Every exertion was now in exerciſe, to complete the works, and to obſtruct the river. The latter was near Fort Waſhington, and proſecuted by ſinking a number of large hulks, and frames called *chevaux-de-friſe*, compoſed of large and long timbers framed together, with

points

points elevated, to pierce and ſtop the way of veſſels meeting of them. Theſe were boxed at the bottom, to contain a vaſt weight of ſtones, which were put into them, and with which they ſunk. A line of theſe, and hulks, was formed acroſs the river; ſome of them ſunk very well; others, rather irregular; and ſome of the hulks, which were ſtrapped together with large timbers, ſeparated in going down. A paſſage was left open for veſſels to paſs through; and the Britiſh, as it was proved afterwards, found the means of knowing where it was, and of paſſing through it.

27th.—Intelligence was received, that Gen. Burgoyne had arrived in Canada, with a ſtrong reinforcement. The militia were called in, to reinforce the army at New-York.

28th.—One Thomas Hickey, a private ſoldier in the General's guard, was executed. He was found guilty of mutiny, ſedition, and the worſt of practices, as it was expreſſed. The ſame day, the Britiſh fleet arrived at Sandy Hook.

29th.—The tranſports were coming in, during the whole day. At evening, nearly 100 ſail had arrived. Col. Durkee's regiment was ordered over to Paulus Hook. The General Officers were in council.

30th.—Mrs. Waſhington left the city.

July 2d.—Between 10 and 11 o'clock, A. M. four Britiſh men-of-war, and ſeveral tenders, came through the Narrows, and anchored near the watering-place on Staten-Iſland. In the afternoon, they cannonaded towards the iſland. A little before ſun-ſetting, about 40 ſail of tranſports came up to the ſhips of war. The Americans lay on their arms, during the night.

3d.—The Britiſh troops landed on Staten-Iſland. A part of the ſtock had been taken off. The inhabitants, who were about 350 men, were ſuppoſed to be generally oppoſed to the revolution.

9th.

9th.—At evening roll-call, the declaration of the Congreſs, declaring the United Colonies *FREE, SOVEREIGN, AND INDEPENDENT STATES*, was publiſhed at the head of the reſpective brigades, in camp, and received with loud huzzas.

12th.—Two Britiſh ſhips of war, the Phenix and Roſe, and three tenders, at about 4 o'clock, P. M. taking the advantage of the tide and a freſh breeze, came up from the fleet, and paſſed the city up the Hudſon. A briſk cannonade took place from Red Hook, Governor's Iſland, Paulus Hook, and all the batteries on the North River ſide. The ſhips were ſeveral times ſtruck by the ſhot, but received no material damage. The ſhips returned the fire, as they paſſed the batteries; and the encampment of our General's brigade, (the right flank of which being Col. Shepard's regiment) was on the bank of the river. The tents were ſtruck, and dropped on the ground, before the ſhips came a-breaſt of them. Several ſhot fell on the encampment, and one entered the embraſure of a ſmall redoubt, on the flank of the encampment, and ſtruck in the banquette on the oppoſite ſide of the redoubt, between the legs of two ſoldiers, but did no damage. Several American artilleriſts were killed and wounded, by the burſting of ſome of our own cannon. The ſhips ran nearly up to Tappan Bay, and came to anchor.

14th.—A Britiſh officer came up with a flag, with a letter to Gen. Waſhington; but the letter not being properly addreſſed, it was not received. The ſame day, a flag was ſent by Lord Howe to Amboy, with ſundry letters, directed to the chief magiſtrates of ſeveral of the Colonies, and a declaration, offering the King's pardon to ſuch Colonies, towns, or boroughs, as ſhould ſubmit to his Majeſty's laws, &c. Lord and Gen. Howe were Commiſſioners appointed to receive ſubmiſſions.

16th.—Another flag came up from Lord Howe, with a letter directed to George Waſhington, Eſq. &c. &c. &c. which was likewiſe rejected, for the want of a proper direction.

17th.—In the morning, one or two of the Britiſh ſhips ſailed out through the Narrows; and it was conjectured that a number ſailed out during the night. The Britiſh ſhips which had ſailed up the Hudſon, had moved higher up. The Connecticut light-horſe, which had come out to reinforce the army, were returning home.

20th.—A flag from Gen. Howe, with Adj. Gen. Patterſon, came up with a meſſage to Gen. Waſhington, reſpecting the recent capitulation in Canada, and inſinuating that Gen. Howe was deſirous, if poſſible, to bring about an accommodation. The ſame day, news was received from South-Carolina, that the Britiſh, in attempting Sullivan's Iſland, with their ſhips and a large body of troops, ſaid to be from 1300 to 2000, were defeated by the Americans; one frigate burnt and blown up, ſeveral others damaged, and 172 men killed and wounded. On the ſide of the Americans, 10 were ſaid to be killed, and 22 wounded.

21ſt.—A man, dreſſed in woman's clothes, was taken up, in attempting to get to the Britiſh fleet: he was committed to priſon. The ſame day, Gen. Sullivan arrived from Canada. About noon, a number of cannon and ſmall-arms were heard towards Elizabeth-Town.

25th.—A row-galley or two, arrived from Connecticut; and fire-ſhips, rafts, &c. were preparing with great expedition.

26th.—The Britiſh ſhips up the river fell ſome diſtance lower down.

27th.—A regiment of militia, under the command of Col. Holman, arrived from Maſſachuſetts.

28th.

28th.—Two row-gallies moved up the Hudſon.

29th.—Col. Sargent's regiment of Continental troops arrived at Horn's Hook, from Boſton, and Col. Hutchinſon's from the ſame place. Several Britiſh ſhips arrived and joined the fleet.

31ſt.—Intelligence was received, that Dunmore, with his fleet, had got nearly 200 miles up Potowmack River in Virginia; that he had burnt one houſe, and was within about 30 miles of Gen. Waſhington's ſeat.

Auguſt 1ſt.—About 30 ſail of Britiſh ſhips arrived at the Hook. Three or four more row-gallies went up the Hudſon. In bringing the hulks, *chevaux-de-friſe*, &c. round from the Eaſt River, to the Hudſon, a ſloop ſunk, not far from the Grand Battery.

2d.—Glover's regiment arrived from the eaſtward.

3d.—About noon there was a briſk cannonade up the Hudſon, between the American row-gallies and the Britiſh ſhips: the former had two men killed; two mortally, and 12 ſlightly wounded. The Britiſh loſs was not known.

7th.—There were ſome movements among the Britiſh fleet: the men-of-war appeared to be formed in line. Two deſerters came in, who reported that an attack on the Americans was intended ſoon.

8th.—A row-galley and two fire-ſloops went up the river. It was intended to attempt burning the Britiſh ſhips in Tappan Bay. The American army was now very ſickly; four ſoldiers were buried on this day, from our General's brigade only. About, and a *little after* this time, the army was more ſickly than at any other period. The newſpapers at Philadelphia and Boſton, rated the army at 70,000 ſtrong, and in high ſpirits, and that they would ſoon clear the enemy from America. This was not a little mortifying to Gen. Waſhington, who had the evidence, that the army did not exceed 40,000, officers

ficers included; and a large portion of these were levies and militia, called out for short periods, and unacquainted with a camp life. Hence the number of sick amounted to near 10,000; nor was it possible to find proper hospitals or proper necessaries for them. In almost every barn, stable, shed, and even under the fences and bushes, were the sick to be seen, whose countenances were but an index of the dejection of spirit, and the distress they endured.

9th.—It was learnt that the British were preparing for an attack, and were putting their heavy artillery, &c. on board ship.

In reconnoitring the position of New-York, long before this time, all were agreed, that the upper end of the island, and above Kingsbridge, must be secured, or there could be no security to an army on the island; but there was some difference in opinion as to the place. A commanding height, near Morris's house, some distance below the bridge, within the island, was thought by some, among whom was Gen. Putnam, a position which, if properly fortified, would be almost impregnable. While others, among whom was our General, and his brother Gen. Greene, who were generally in sentiment, insisted that there could be no security on the island, although the post before mentioned was made as strong as Gibralter, if the heights above the bridge were left unfortified, as the enemy might at any time, in an hour or two, possess themselves of those heights above the bridge, and completely entrap the army; and each declared positively, that he would not rest easy or satisfied, until those grounds were taken possession of. Fort Washington was begun on the hill first mentioned, and the works were pushed as fast as possible; and it was determined to erect another fort above the bridge, which was also begun, and called Independence. Every exertion was now in exercise to complete the works

works in and about the city, ſome of which were ſtrong. Indeed, immenſe labour had been beſtowed on the works at the city, on Long-Iſland, at Horn's Hook, near Hell Gate, and at Paulus Hook, on the Jerſey ſide, oppoſite the city, on Governor's Iſland, &c.

11th.—Our General received a commiſſion from Congreſs, dated the 9th, appointing him a Major-General in the army of the United States of America. Generals Spencer, Sullivan and Green, received, at the ſame time, commiſſions of the ſame tenor.

12th.—In the afternoon, 30 or 40 Britiſh veſſels came through the Narrows, and joined the fleet.

13th.—A number more of ſhips, ſome of them very large, came in and joined the fleet: the ſhips up the river fell a little lower down.

14th.—Our General rode to Horn's Hook and Kingſbridge. The perſon who had the direction of the fire-veſſels, requeſted him to be a ſpectator on the bank of the river, of an attempt, intended to be made on that night, to burn the ſhips. Attended by Gen. Clinton, and ſeveral other officers, they waited on the bank until about midnight; but no attempt on the ſhips was made, and they returned diſappointed.

16th.—Our General was again requeſted to be a ſpectator on the bank of the river, the approaching night, with the moſt poſitive aſſurances that he ſhould not be again diſappointed: he accordingly went, attended as on the preceding time, and took a proper poſition on the bank. The night was pretty dark; they ſoon found that the gallies and fire-veſſels were ſilently moving up, with the tide. After ſome time, and almoſt immediately after the centinels, on board the Britiſh ſhips, had paſſed the word, "*all is well*," two of the fire-veſſels flaſhed into a blaze; the one, cloſe on the ſide of the Phenix, the other grappling

one

one of the tenders. To appearance, the flames were againſt the ſide of the Phenix; and there was much confuſion on board. A number of cannon were diſcharged into the fire-veſſel, in order to ſink her. A number of ſeamen aſcended, and got out on the yard-arm, ſuppoſed to clear away ſome grapplings. The fire-veſſel was along ſide, as was judged, near ten minutes, when the Phenix either cut, or ſlipt her cable, let fall her fore-topſail, wore round, and ſtood up the river, being immediately veiled from the ſpectators, by the darkneſs of the night. The tender burnt down to the water's edge, and was towed to the ſhore by the Americans; out of which was taken, one iron ſix-pounder, two three-pounders, one two-pounder, ten ſwivels, a caboofe, ſome gun-barrels, cutlaſſes, grapplings, chains, &c. The Roſe, and the other two tenders, remained at their moorings; but it was ſaid that one of the tenders was deſerted by her crew, for a time. Several of our gallies were ſaid to have been inactive; otherwiſe, a very conſiderable advantage would have been reaped. The Americans ſuſtained no loſs or injury, ſaving one man, who, in communicating fire to one of the veſſels, got conſiderably burnt in the face, hands, &c.

Talbot

17th.—The Commander in Chief, having ordered our General to take the command of the troops and poſts, at the north end of the iſland, and above Kingſbridge, within which command fell the Forts Waſhington and Independence, and a number of other works, he took the command accordingly.

18th.—Very early in the morning, the wind being pretty freſh, and it being very rainy, the ſhips and tenders which were up the river, got under ſail, and ran down, keeping as cloſe under the eaſt bank as they could, in paſſing our works. They were, however, briſkly cannonaded at Fort Waſhington; and the works below were ſeveral times ſtruck, but received

received no material damage. They joined their fleet near Staten-Iſland.

19th.—It was made pretty certain, that the Britiſh were upon the point of making an attack ſomewhere. By an expreſs, which our General received from Gen. Waſhington, at half paſt 2 o'clock, A. M. of the 22d, he was pleaſed to communicate, that, by intelligence which he had received, the enemy had intentions of making attacks on Long-Iſland, up the North River, upon Bergen Point, Elizabeth-Town Point, Amboy, &c. Perhaps ſo many places were mentioned, in order to divide the force of, and diſtract the Americans. On this morning, however, they landed, near Graveſend Bay, on Long Iſland, about 8,000 men; Col. Hand, with his rifle corps, retreating moderately before them, and deſtroying ſome wheat which would fall into their hands. The Britiſh advanced as far as Flatbuſh, where they halted. Six American regiments were ſent over, as a reinforcement. Gen. Sullivan had the command on the iſland.

24th.—There were ſome ſkirmiſhes on Long-Iſland; but nothing very material.

25th.—A number of the enemy's ſhips fell down towards the Narrows; it was ſuppoſed, with intent to land more troops on Long-Iſland.

26th.—In the morning, a briſk cannonade on Long-Iſland, for ſome time. The Britiſh had thrown up ſome works, at Flatbuſh, from which they fired at the Americans.

27th.—Early in the morning, two ſhips and a brig came to anchor a little above Frog Point. Our General immediately detached Col. Graham with his regiment, to prevent their landing to plunder or burn. Before he arrived, ſeveral barges full of men landed on New City Iſland, and killed a number of cattle. Two companies of the regiment, immediately

mediately on their arrival, ferried over to the iſland. The enemy carried off one man and 14 cattle—the remainder of the cattle were ſecured.

On the ſame day, there was a moſt bloody battle on Long-Iſland, between the Americans and the Britiſh. The Britiſh, by a long circuitous march in the night of the 26th, with a part of their army, found the left of the Americans not ſo well ſecured as it ought to have been; and they had an opportunity to reach ground, which gave them great advantage, while it equally expoſed the Americans in the ſtrong grounds towards Flatbuſh. There was here alſo another circumſtance of ground, which now proved very diſadvantageous to the Americans. There was a conſiderable marſh, into which a creek ran, and on which there was a mill, known by the name of M'Gowen's. At the mill there was a paſsway over; but unluckily, when *ſome* of the Americans had retreated by this mill, (for they were ſoon routed by the Britiſh, who formed an attack almoſt in a ſemi-circle) it was ſet on fire. This would have been a politic ſtep, had *all* the Americans on the other ſide, in that quarter, previouſly paſſed; but thoſe ſtill beyond the creek were now driven to almoſt deſperate circumſtances: they could not paſs at the head of the creek; for the Britiſh column, which made the circuitous movement, were in poſſeſſion of the ground on the left; conſequently, many were here killed or taken priſoners, and numbers periſhed in attempting to get over the creek, ſome of them ſticking in the mud. Thoſe who eſcaped retreated to the American works. The Britiſh ſuſtained a conſiderable loſs in killed and wounded, and a ſubaltern and 23 men were taken priſoners; but the American loſs was far greater, in killed, wounded, and priſoners. Among the latter were Gen. Sullivan and Lord Sterling. Several field-

pieces

pieces were alſo loſt. At evening, the Britiſh army encamped in front of the Americans.

On the morning of the 28th, there was a ſkirmiſh between the Americans and Britiſh, which terminated rather in favour of the former. The ſame night, the Britiſh began to open works, at the diſtance of about 600 yards from the American works on the left. Gen. Waſhington wrote to our General, to ſend down to the city all the boats that could be ſpared, from Kingſbridge and Fort Waſhington; intimating, that he might poſſibly find it neceſſary, at night, to throw over more troops to Long-Iſland. This order was immediately complied with, and the boats ſent down; while the real intention of their uſe was fully underſtood.

29th.—The ſhips in the Eaſt River fell down to Hunt's Point. On the ſame night, the Americans evacuated Long-Iſland, bringing off their military ſtores, proviſions, &c. Some heavy cannon were left. In this retreat from the iſland, and which was well conducted, an inſtance of diſcipline and of true fortitude was exhibited by the American guards and pickets. In order that the Britiſh ſhould not get knowledge of the withdraw of the Americans, until their main body had embarked in the boats and puſhed off from the ſhore, (which was a matter of the higheſt importance to their ſafety) the guards were ordered to continue at their reſpective poſts, with centinels alert, as if nothing extraordinary was taking place, until the troops had embarked: they were then to come off, march briſkly to the ferry, and embark themſelves. But, ſomehow or other, the guards came off, and had got well toward the landing-place, when they were ordered to face about, march back, and re-occupy their former poſts; which they inſtantly obeyed, and continued at them, until called off to croſs the ferry. Whoever has

ſeen troops in a ſimilar ſituation, or duly contemplates the human heart in ſuch trials, well know how to appreciate the conduct of theſe brave men, on this occaſion.

31ſt.—In the forenoon, the Britiſh appeared at Newton, where they pitched a number of tents. Governor's Iſland was evacuated the preceding night by the Americans. It was now evident, that the next object of the enemy would be to get the city; and it was equally ſo, that they would land ſomewhere on the iſland without it. This night, ſeveral of the regiments of Gen. Mifflin's brigade, of our General's diviſion, lay on the hills towards New-York; and Gen. Clinton's brigade on their arms. The ſame evening, Hand's, Shee's, Magaw's, Broadhead's, and Miles's battalions, joined our General's diviſion. Some of theſe corps had ſuffered greatly, in the action on Long-Iſland.

September 1ſt.—The Britiſh appeared to be encamped in ſeveral places on Long-Iſland. They had run a ſhip in between Nutten Iſland and Red Hook.

2d.—They ran a ſhip paſt the city up the Eaſt River: ſhe was ſeveral times ſtruck by the ſhot of a 12 pounder, which was drawn to the river's bank. Major Crane, of the artillery, was wounded in the foot, by a cannon ſhot from this ſhip. It was now a queſtion, whether to defend the city, or evacuate it, and occupy the ſtrong grounds above. Every exertion had been made, to render the works both numerous and ſtrong; and immenſe labour and expenſe had been beſtowed on them; and it was now determined that the city ſhould be obſtinately defended.

4th.—Gen. Waſhington came up, and dined at our General's quarters. The ſame day, a detachment of the artillery, with one 24 pounder, three 12 pounders, three 3 pounders, and a howitzer, joined

joined the diviſion. The enemy were plundering cattle on Long-Iſland, now fully in their poſſeſſion.

5th.—Our General ordered a chain of videtts and centinels to be formed at Morriſſania, Hunt's and Frog's Point, &c. The Britiſh were preſſing a great number of teams on Long-Iſland—their Head-Quarters were at Bedford.

7th.—The militia on Long-Iſland were ordered to muſter, to raiſe recruits for the King. The General Officers of the American army were in council, at Head-Quarters in New-York. The Britiſh were now erecting a work, nearly oppoſite to our's at Horn's Hook, and the diſtance not great.

8th.—The Britiſh opened their battery againſt Horn's Hook Fort. The fire was briſkly returned. The Americans had one man killed, and two wounded.

9th.—In the morning there was a briſk cannonade on both ſides. At Horn's Hook, the American artillery was ſo well plied, that the Britiſh ceaſed firing. The Britiſh were ſaid to be encamped in three diviſions; one at Newton, which was Head-Quarters, one at Fluſhing, and one at Jamaica.

10th.—The Britiſh landed a number of troops on Montreſors Iſland.

11th.—The Britiſh continued to cannonade and bombard our fort at Horn's Hook, and to land more troops on Montreſors Iſland.

12th.—The cannonade continued againſt our fort at Horn's Hook, and the Britiſh were moving their troops towards the Eaſt River. This day, Col. Ward's regiment of Connecticut troops removed from Burditt's Ferry, and joined our General's diviſion. The General Officers were in council. A former reſolution to defend the city was reſcinded, with three diſſentients.

13th.—Four Britiſh ſhips, one of which was a two-decker, ran by the city up the Eaſt River. The

cannonade

cannonade and bombardment at Horn's Hook continued. This evening, Col. Cheſter, with five regiments, joined our General's diviſion.

14th.—The Britiſh ſent three or four ſhips up the North River, as far as Greenwich. The cannon and ſtores were removing from New-York, during the night.

15th.—About noon, the Britiſh landed at Kepps's Bay. They met with but ſmall reſiſtance, and puſhed towards the city, of which they took poſſeſſion in the afternoon. They availed themſelves of ſome cannon and ſtores; but their booty was not very great. Here the Americans, we are ſorry to ſay, did not behave well; and here it was, as fame hath ſaid, that Gen. Waſhington threw his hat on the ground, and exclaimed, "Are theſe the men with which I am to defend America?" But ſeveral things may have weight here;—the wounds received on Long-Iſland were yet bleeding; and the officers, if not the men, knew that the city was not to be defended. Maj. Chapman was killed, and Brig. Maj. Wyllis was taken priſoner. A few others were killed, wounded, and taken priſoners. The Americans retreated up the iſland; and ſome few, who could not get out of the city that way, eſcaped in boats over to Paulus Hook, acroſs the river. The houſe, in the fort at Horn's Hook, was ſet on fire by a ſhell, and burnt down. The fort was afterwards abandoned.

16th.—A little before noon, a ſmart ſkirmiſh happened on the heights weſt of Haarlem Plain, and ſouth of Morris's houſe, between a party of Heſſian Yagers, Britiſh Light-Infantry and Highlanders, and the American rifflemen and ſome other troops, which ended in favour of the latter. The troops fought well, on both ſides, and gave great proof of their markſmanſhip. The Americans had ſeveral officers killed and wounded; among the former, Lieut. Col.

Col. Knoulton, of the Connecticut line, and Capt. Gleaſon, of Nixon's Maſſachuſetts regiment, two excellent officers; and Maj. Beech, of one of the ſouthern regiments, a brave officer, was among the latter. This ſkirmiſh might have brought on a general action; for both armies were then within ſupporting diſtance of the troops which were engaged.

It now became an object of high importance, to calculate, if poſſible, where the Britiſh would make their next attempt; and here the General Officers were divided in opinion. A part of them imagined, that the Britiſh would firſt endeavour to make themſelves maſters of the whole of New-York Iſland, and that, therefore, the reduction of Fort Waſhington, and its dependencies, would be their object. Others ſuppoſed, that they would make a landing either at Morriſſania, Hunt's or Frog's Point, which eventually would produce as certain a reduction of the works on the iſland, with very little loſs to the Britiſh. It was therefore determined in council, to guard againſt both; and for this purpoſe, 10,000 men were to be retained on the iſland, at and near Fort Waſhington. Our General's diviſion was to be augmented to 10,000 men, and a floating bridge was to be thrown acroſs Haarlem Creek, that theſe two bodies might communicate with and ſupport each other, as circumſtances might require; and Major-Gen. Greene was to command the flying camp on the Jerſey ſide of the Hudſon, which was to conſiſt of 5,000. The different arrangements took place accordingly.

17th.—The remains of Lieut. Col. Knoulton were interred with military honours. The ſame day, a troop of militia light-horſe arrived from Connecticut; others, and many of the militia were on their way to join the army.

18th.—Gen. Parſons's and Scott's brigades, and the brigade commanded by Col. Dudley Sargent, joined

joined our General's diviſion; and Shee's, Magaw's, Haſlett's, Atlee's, and Broadhead's battalions were ordered away. The Britiſh army encamped between the American army and the city.

A picket from our General's diviſion, of 450 men, conſtantly mounted, by relief, at Morriſſania; from which a chain of centinels, within half gun-ſhot of each other, were planted, from the one ſide of the ſhore to the other, and near the water paſſage, between Morriſſania and Montreſors Iſland, which in ſome places is very narrow. The centinels on the American ſide were ordered not to preſume to fire at thoſe of the Britiſh, unleſs the latter began; but the Britiſh were ſo fond of beginning, that there was frequently a firing between them. This having been the caſe one day, and a Britiſh officer walking along the bank, on the Montreſors ſide, an American centinel, who had been exchanging ſome ſhots with a Britiſh centinel, ſeeing the officer, and concluding him to be better game, gave him a ſhot, and wounded him. He was carried up to the houſe on the iſland. An officer, with a flag, ſoon came down to the creek, and called for the American officer of the picket, and informed him, that if the American centinels fired any more, the commanding-officer on the iſland would cannonade Col. Morris's houſe, in which the officers of the picket quartered. The American officer immediately ſent up to our General, to know what anſwer ſhould be returned. He was directed to inform the Britiſh officer, that the American centinels had always been inſtructed not to fire on *centinels*, unleſs they were firſt fired upon, and then to return the fire; that ſuch would be their conduct: as to the cannonading of Col. Morris's houſe, they might act their pleaſure. The firing ceaſed for ſome time; but a raw Scotch centinel, having been planted, one day, he very ſoon after diſcharged his piece at an American

American centinel, neareſt to him, which was immediately returned; upon which a Britiſh officer came down, and called to the American officers, obſerving that he thought there was to be no firing between the centinels. He was anſwered, that their own began; upon which he replied, "He ſhall then pay for it." The centinel was directly after relieved, and there was no firing between the centinels, at that place, any more; and they were ſo civil to each other, on their poſts, that one day, at a part of the creek where it was practicable, the Britiſh centinel aſked the American, who was nearly oppoſite to him, if he could give him a chew of tobacco: the latter, having in his pocket a piece of a thick twiſted roll, ſent it acroſs the creek, to the Britiſh centinel, who, after taking off his bite, ſent the remainder back again.

20th.—The Commander in Chief, Maj. Gen. Putnam, and ſome other officers, came up to our General's diviſion, and rode round the camp, which, by the return, given in on the next day, conſiſted of 8,771; but of theſe there was 1,294 ſick preſent, and 1,108 ſick abſent.

On the morning of the 21ſt, between one and two o'clock, the light of a great fire was diſcovered to the ſouthward, which proved to be at New-York; when a conſiderable part of the city was conſumed.

22d.—Two ſeamen, belonging to the La Brune, a Britiſh ſhip of war, which lay near Montreſors Iſland, deſerted, and came to our General's quarters; and informed him, upon examination, that the Britiſh had then but a few men on the iſland, ſtating the number; that the piece of cannon, which had been put on the iſland, was taken back again, on board the La Brune; that there were a number of officers at the houſe, in which there was a conſiderable quantity of baggage depoſited, &c. Our General ſuppoſed that theſe troops might be eaſily taken;

and,

and, having called the General Officers of his divifion together, took their opinion, who all coincided with him in fentiment. He then communicated his intention to the Commander in Chief, who gave it his approbation. Two hundred and forty men were deftined for this enterprife: the command was given to Lieut. Col. Michael Jackfon, of the Maffachufetts line, with Majors Logan and ——, whofe name cannot be recollected, of the New-York troops. They were to embark on board three flat-boats, covered by a fourth with a detachment of artillery, with a light three-pounder, in cafe it fhould be found neceffary in retreating from the ifland. The mode of attack was fettled, and every circumftance fecured, to promife fuccefs. They were to fall down Haarlem Creek with the ebb. The time was fo calculated, that the young flood was to be fo much made, at the break of day, as to cover the flats at the ifland, fufficiently for the boats to float. Matters being thus fettled, our General ordered the two failors to be brought in; he then told them, that in confequence of their information, an enterprife againft the Britifh troops on Montrefors Ifland, was to take place that night; that he had ordered them to be kept in fafe cuftody until the next morning, when, if their declarations refpecting the ftate of the Britifh on the ifland, proved to be true, he would give them a paffport to the back country, whither they wifhed to go; but, in cafe their information was falfe, he would order them hanged immediately, as fpies; that he gave them the opportunity, if they had made a wrong ftatement to him, then to correct it. They both anfwered, with perfect compofure, that they would cheerfully fubmit to the condition. Major Thomas Henly was now one of our General's Aids-de-camp. He importuned that he might go with the detachment. He was refufed, and told that he had no bufi-

nefs

neſs there; that he could exerciſe no command. He grew quite impatient, returned again to the General's room, and addreſſed him: "Pray, Sir, conſent to my going with the party—let me have the pleaſure of introducing the priſoners to you to-morrow." All his friends preſent adviſed him not to go. The General finally conſented. The troops, at the hour aſſigned, embarked. Our General informed them, that he, with others, would be ſpectators of the ſcene, from a certain point near Haarlem Creek. Notice had been given to the guards and pickets on the *York Iſland* ſide, not to hail the party as they went down. Unfortunately, the lower centinel had not been ſo inſtructed. He was nearly oppoſite to the point where our General was to be; and juſt at the inſtant when he arrived, had challenged the boats, and ordered them to come to the ſhore. From the boats they anſwered, "Lo! we are friends." The challenge was repeated. The anſwer was, "We tell you we are friends—hold your tongue." A bounce into the water was heard; and inſtantly Maj. Henly came wading to the ſhore, ſtepped up to our General, catched him by the hand, and ſaid, "Sir, will it do?" Our General, holding him by the hand, replied, "I ſee nothing to the contrary;" to which Henly concluded by ſaying, "*Then it ſhall do.*" He waded back to his boat, and got in. The centinel called again: "If you don't come to the ſhore, I tell you I'll fire." A voice from ſome one in the boats, was, "*Pull away!*" The boats went on, and the centinel fired his piece. The boats reached the iſland almoſt at the moment intended, juſt as the glimmer of the dawn was diſcoverable. The three field-officers were in the firſt boats. Their intention, on the moment of landing, was, for the two ſeconds in command to ſpring, the one to the right, and the other to the left, and lead on the troops from the other

two boats, which were to land on each ſide of the firſt boat. The field-officers landed, and the men from their boat. The enemy's guard charged them, but were inſtantly driven back. The men in the other two boats, inſtead of landing, lay upon their oars. The Britiſh, ſeeing this, returned warmly to the charge. The Americans, finding themſelves thus deſerted, returned to their boat; but not until Lieut. Col. Jackſon received a muſket-ball in his leg, and Maj. Henly, as he was getting into the boat, one through his heart, which put an inſtant end to his life. The boat joined the others, and they all returned, having, in the whole, about 14 killed, wounded, and miſſing; Maj. Henly deeply regretted. Had only one of the other boats landed her men, the ſucceſs would have been very probable; but the two would have inſured an execution of the whole plan, in the opinion of all concerned. The delinquents in the other boats were arreſted, and tried by court-martial, and one of the Captains caſhiered.

On the night of the 23d, the Britiſh got poſſeſſion of the works at Paulus Hook. The Americans had previouſly taken off all the cannon and ſtores. On the afternoon of the 24th, the remains of Maj. Henly were interred by the ſide of Lieut. Col. Knoulton, on New-York Iſland, with military honours.

25th.—The militia, which had come out from the weſtern parts of the State of Connecticut, were diſcharged.

26th.—The General Officers were in council with a committee of Congreſs, ſent to make inquiry into the condition of the army, and agree upon the neceſſary augmentation.

27th.—The Council ſet again. The ſame day, Maj. Gen. Sullivan, who had for ſome time been a priſoner with the Britiſh, came to Head-Quarters. The American priſoners, which were taken in Canada,

ada, were ſent round by water, and landed at Bergen Point, New-Jerſey, where they were ſet at liberty. Gen. Thompſon was among them.

28th.—Seven recruits for Maj. Rogers's corps, raiſing for Britiſh ſervice, were taken going to Long-Iſland, and ſent in.

29th.—There was an unuſual movement of boats from Long-Iſland to Montreſors Iſland, and an attack was ſoon expected.

30th.—The moving over of boats to Montreſors Iſland continued. The ſame day, a frigate went through Hell Gate, and came to anchor about 10 o'clock, A. M. near the La Brune. At 12 o'clock, ſhe came to ſail, and ſtood to the eaſtward. Juſt at evening another ſhip came up; and the next morning,

October 1ſt, was at anchor in the channel, between Haarlem and Baman's or Eldridge's Iſland.

3d.—The Brigadier-Generals of our General's diviſion were in council, and ſeveral new works were laid out; among others, a redoubt on the hill above *Williams's Bridge*. Our General, in reconnoitring his poſition, accompanied by Col. *Hand*, below the camp of the rifle corps, being apprehenſive that the Britiſh might land on Frog's Neck, took a view of the cauſeway between Weſt-Cheſter and the point. Upon the neck, which runs between theſe two, is a tide-mill; and a plank bridge at the mill, at the weſt end of the cauſeway, (the ſide of the American army) was at this time a range of cord-wood, as advantageouſly ſituated to cover a party to defend the paſs, as if conſtructed for the very purpoſe. After taking a full view, our General directed Col. Hand, immediately upon his return to his camp, to fix upon one of the beſt ſubaltern officers, and 25 picked men of his corps, and aſſign them to this paſs, as their alarm-poſt at all times; and, in caſe the enemy made a landing on Frog's Neck, to direct

this

this officer immediately to take up the planks of the bridge; to have every thing in readineſs to ſet the mill on fire; but not to do it, unleſs the fire of the riflemen ſhould appear inſufficient to check the advance of the enemy on to the cauſeway; to aſſign another party to the head of the creek; to reinforce both, in caſe the enemy landed; and that he ſhould be ſupported. Col. Hand made his arrangements accordingly.

4th.—The brig and tenders in the Eaſt River came down, and caſt anchor near the La Brune frigate; and the Roebuck and Phenix ſailed up the North River, and joined the other ſhips which lay at anchor there.

5th.—There were ſome movements among the Britiſh; and a party appeared to be very buſy at work, a little below Haarlem. The ſame night, the Americans left the heights of Bergen. They were upwards of 2,000 ſtrong. They retreated as far back as Burditt's Ferry.

6th.—Orders were given for throwing up a new work on Haarlem Creek, below the wood at Morriſſania.

7th.—Gen. *Lincoln* came to camp. He had come from Maſſachuſetts with a body of militia. This was the firſt of his joining the main army. The ſame day, the Britiſh were putting over horſes from Horn's Hook to Long-Iſland, and fixing their pontoons.

9th.—Early in the morning, three ſhips, two of 40 guns, and one frigate, with two or three tenders, ſtood up the North River. They were briſkly cannonaded from Fort Waſhington and Fort Conſtitution. They however paſſed our works and the *chevaux-de-friſe*; the American galleys, ſmall craft, and two large ſhips ſtanding on before them. The two ſhips were ran on ſhore near Phillips's mills,

and

and two of the galleys near Dobb's Ferry. The enemy took poſſeſſion of the two galleys, and got them off. A boat landed a number of men, who plundered a ſtore, ſtove the caſks, and then ſet the ſtore on fire, and left it. The Americans ſoon extinguiſhed the fire.

Our General ordered Col. Sargent, with 500 infantry, 40 light-horſe, Capt. Horton of the artillery, with two 12 pounders, and Capt. Crafts with a howitzer, to march immediately, with all poſſible expedition, to Dobb's Ferry. The enemy took a ſchooner loaded with rum, ſugar, wine, &c. and ſunk a ſloop, which had on board the machine, invented by, and under the direction of, a Mr. *Buſhnell*, intended to blow up the Britiſh ſhips. This machine was worked under water. It conveyed a magazine of powder, which was to be fixed under the keel of a ſhip, then freed from the machine, and left with clock-work going, which was to produce fire when the machine had got out of the way. Mr. Buſhnell had great confidence of its ſucceſs, and had made ſeveral experiments which ſeemed to give him countenance; but its fate was truly a contraſt to its deſign.

Our General's diviſion was formed in line, with its advance, reſerve flank-guards, and artillery, all in order of battle, when they were moved down over the different grounds, which it was ſuppoſed might be the ſcene of action. Some of this ground was very broken, and there were many fences. Theſe afforded frequent opportunities for the troops to break off and form; for the pioneers to open avenues, &c. and for the whole to become acquainted with every part of the ground, and the beſt choice of it, if ſuddenly called to action.

10th.—One of the ſhips which was ran a-ground, was got off by the Americans. Col. Sargent returned, having left 180 men to watch the motions of the Britiſh up the river. 11th.

11th.—There was a conſiderable movement among the Britiſh boats below. This afternoon, Gen. Waſhington's pleaſure-boat, coming down the river with a freſh breeze, and a topſail hoiſted, was ſuppoſed, by the artilleriſts at Mount Waſhington, to be one of the Britiſh tenders running down. A 12 pounder was diſcharged at her, which was ſo exactly pointed, as unfortunately to kill three Americans, who were much lamented. The ſame day, ſeveral of Gen. Lincoln's regiments arrived, two of which were poſted on the North River.

12th.—Early in the morning, 80 or 90 Britiſh boats, full of men, ſtood up the ſound, from Montreſors Iſland, Long-Iſland, &c. The troops landed at Frog's Neck, and their advance puſhed towards the cauſeway and bridge, at Weſt-Cheſter mill. Col. Hand's riflemen took up the planks of the bridge, as had been directed, and commenced a firing with their rifles. The Britiſh moved towards the head of the creek, but found here alſo the Americans in poſſeſſion of the paſs. Our General immediately (as he had aſſured Col. Hand he would do) ordered Col. Preſcott, the hero of Bunker Hill, with his regiment, and Capt. Lieut. Bryant of the artillery, with a 3 pounder, to reinforce the riflemen at Weſt-Cheſter cauſeway; and Col. Graham of the New-York line, with his regiment, and Lieut. Jackſon of the artillery, with a 6 pounder, to reinforce at the head of the creek; all of which was promptly done, to the check and diſappointment of the enemy. The Britiſh encamped on the neck. The riflemen and Yagers kept up a ſcattering popping at each other acroſs the marſh; and the Americans on their ſide, and the Britiſh on the other, threw up a work at the end of the cauſeway. Capt. Bryant, now and then, when there was an object, ſaluted the Britiſh with a field-piece.

In

In the afternoon, 40 or 50 ſail of veſſels paſſed up, and came to anchor off Frog's Point. The ſame evening, Gen. M'Dougal's brigade joined our General's diviſion.

13th.—The brigade, formerly under the command of our General, when he was Brigadier, joined his diviſion. The diviſion now became very ſtrong. The General Officers of the army were this day in council, at our General's Quarters.

14th.—Our General, with the Generals under his command, reconnoitred the enemy at Frog's Neck; afterwards, the General Officers of the army reconnoitred the various grounds. The ſame day, Maj. Gen. Lee was ordered to the command of the troops above Kingſbridge, now become the largeſt part of the American army. But Gen. Waſhington had deſired him not to exerciſe the command for a day or two, until he could make himſelf acquainted with the poſt, its circumſtances, and arrangements of duty. A great number of ſloops, boats, &c. were paſſing the ſound eaſtward, juſt at duſk—probably conveying ammunition, proviſions, &c. to the troops at Frog's Point.

15th.—Five ſailors came off from the La Brune. They informed, that there was a large body of the Britiſh on Frog's Point, and that an attack might be ſoon expected. The ſcattering fire acroſs the marſh continued, and now and then a man was killed.

16th.—Two works were diſcovered on Frog's Neck, nearly finiſhed. The General Officers of the army rode to reconnoitre the ground at *Pell's Neck*, &c. and it was determined that the poſition of the American army ſhould be immediately changed; the left flank to be extended more northerly, to prevent its being turned by the Britiſh.

17th.—Wadſworth's and Fellows's brigades, came to Kingſbridge. The Britiſh ſhipping, &c. continued moving eaſtward. 18th.

18th.—The regiment at Weſt-Cheſter cauſeway had been relieved by another. The officer on command there, this morning, ſent up an expreſs to our General, informing him that the Britiſh were opening an embraſure in their work at the end of the cauſeway, and that he apprehended they intended, under a cannonade from this, to attempt to paſs. Our General ordered one of his Aids to gallop his horſe to the officer commanding the brigade, near Volentine's, the neareſt to Weſt-Cheſter, and order him to form his brigade inſtantly. Arriving, himſelf, by the time the brigade was formed, he ordered the officer to march, with the utmoſt expedition, to the head of the cauſeway, to reinforce the troops there; himſelf moving on with them. When the troops had advanced to about half the way between the head of the creek, and the poſt at the head of the cauſeway, another expreſs met him, informing him that the whole Britiſh army were in motion, and ſeemed to be moving towards the paſs at the head of the creek. Upon this, the brigade was ordered to halt, the whole to prime and load, and the rear regiment to file off by the left, and march briſkly to reinforce the Americans at the paſs, at the head of the creek. At this inſtant, Gen. Waſhington came up, and having inquired of our General, the ſtate of things, ordered him to return immediately, and have his diviſion formed ready for action, and to take ſuch a poſition as might appear beſt calculated to oppoſe the enemy, ſhould they attempt to land another body of troops on Morriſſania, which he thought not improbable. Our General immediately obeyed the order.

The wind was now freſh at ſouth-weſt. The Britiſh croſſed to the other ſide of Frog's Neck, embarked on board their boats, croſſed over the cove, landed on Pell's Neck, and moved briſkly upwards.

Three

Three or four of the American regiments advanced towards them, and took a good position behind a stone fence. When the British had advanced sufficiently near, they gave them a pretty close fire, which checked them, and even obliged them to fall back; but being immediately supported, they returned vigorously to the charge. The action was sharp, for a short time; but the Americans were soon obliged to give way to superior force. *Shepard's*, *Read's*, *Baldwin's*, and *Glover's* regiments, had the principal share in this action. The Americans had between 30 and 40 men killed and wounded; among the latter, Col. Shepard, in the throat, not mortally, although the ball came well nigh effecting instant death. The loss of the British was not known, but must have been considerable. They advanced almost to New Rochelle, and halted. The American army extended its left.

A number of boats went down towards New-York. It now became necessary, immediately to quit the position in the neighbourhood of Kingsbridge, the British being in the rear of the left of our army; and it is not a little unaccountable, that they did not attempt to stretch themselves across to the Hudson, which might have been done with great ease. They only moved higher up, on the other side of the little rivulet *Brunx*, which was generally fordable. The White Plains were fixed upon for the next position of the American army. A strong garrison was to be left at Fort Washington, and our General was to leave one of his regiments, to garrison Fort Independence.

21st.—At about 4 o'clock, P. M. our General's division moved from above Kingsbridge, having, besides their light field-pieces, two heavy iron twelve-pounders. About 8 o'clock in the evening, they passed Gen. Lincoln's quarters, on Volentine's Hill,

where the Commander in Chief was to ſpend the night. Our General waited upon him, to know if he had any particular commands for him. The Commander in Chief only adviſed to ſend forward one of his regiments, to occupy the road coming from *Ward's Bridge*, nearly to whoſe farm the Britiſh had now advanced; leſt, appriſed of his moving, they ſhould annoy his right flank, which, if it had been day-light, would have been open to their view: But before the column reached this croſs road, it was learnt, that Col. Jonathan Brewer's regiment of artificers, who were pretty ſtrong, and well armed, were to paſs the night at the entrance of the road, leading to the bridge before mentioned. The diviſion reached Chaderton's Hill, to the ſouth of White Plains, at 4 o'clock in the morning of the 22d, having marched all night. The inſtant our General aſcended the hill, he noticed, to appearance, many flaſhes, reſembling the flaſh of the pan of a muſket, on the other ſide of the lot; on which he immediately ordered a Captain, with a party, to diſcover what it was; who returned, that he could not make diſcovery of any thing. Theſe were indeed the flaſhes of diſcharged muſkets at ſome diſtance; the height of ground having decoyed the appearance of the diſtance. Lord Sterling, who was before in this vicinity with his brigade, had formed an enterpriſe againſt Maj. Rogers's corps. The old Indian hunter in the laſt French war, who had now engaged in the Britiſh ſervice, with his corps, now lay on the out-poſt of the Britiſh army, near Marroneck. The enterpriſe was conducted with good addreſs; and if the Americans had known exactly how Rogers's corps lay, they would probably have killed or taken the whole. As it was, 36 priſoners, 60 muſkets, and ſome other articles, were taken. The Major, conformably to his former general conduct, eſcaped with

with the reſt of his corps. This was a pretty affair; and if the writer could recollect the name of the commanding-officer, with pride and pleaſure he would inſert it. He belonged to one of the ſouthern lines of the army; and the whole of the party were ſouthern troops.

The ſame day, our General moved his diviſion, and took poſt on the high ſtrong ground, to the north of the court-houſe. Gen. Sullivan's diviſion reached the Plains in the courſe of the ſucceeding night. In the poſition of White Plains, our General's diviſion was on the left of the line. On his left was a deep hollow, through which ran a ſmall brook, which came from a mill-pond, a little above. On the eaſt ſide of this hollow was a very commanding ground, which would enfilade the diviſion. The top of this high ground was covered with wood. To this hill he ordered Col. Malcolm, with his regiment of New-York troops, and Lieut. Fenno of the artillery, with a field-piece, directing them to take poſt in the ſkirt of the wood, at the ſouth brow of the hill. The ground, from our General's left to the right, deſcended gradually a very conſiderable diſtance, and then gradually aſcended up to the plain, and ſtill on to the right, to more commanding ground. On this was the American army formed, the line running nearly from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt. There were ſome ſtrong works thrown up on the plain, acroſs the road, and ſtill to the right of it. Chaderton's Hill was a little advanced of the line, and ſeparated from it by the little rivulet Brunx. A body of the Americans were poſted on this hill. Head-Quarters were on the plain, near the croſs roads. Our General's diviſion had only ſlight works for muſketry.

23d.—A cannonade was heard towards the Hudſon. The ſame evening, Col. Tyler's, Hunting-

ton's

ton's and Throop's regiments, of General Parsons's brigade, and of our General's division, moved, and took post at the head of King-street, near Rye Pond. Gen. Lee's division had not yet got up to the army.

24th.—At 5 o'clock, A. M. a firing of small-arms was heard to the southward. It was a skirmish between 200 men of Gen. Lee's division, and 250 Hessians—10 of the latter were killed, and two taken prisoners. The British continued moving up, but with great caution, their rear scarcely advancing, when they came to encamp again, much further than where the advance had moved from—they advanced in two columns.

25th.—Eight American regiments were ordered to be ready to march in the approaching night. Gen. Putnam was to command them; and they were intended to make an attack on the enemy's advance, if it should appear to be practicable. The same morning, one 12 pounder at Dobb's Ferry drove the British man-of-war off that place from her station.

26th.—Gen. Lee's division joined the army. In ascending some of the hills on the road, this division, encumbered with many waggons, was obliged to halt, and double the teams, in open view of the British, and at no considerable distance, who did not attempt to disturb them; which, had they done, the loss of the cannon, waggons, &c. could not have been avoided. The troops would have bent their march unencumbered towards the Hudson; but the waggons, &c. must have been left. Two or three British soldiers and a Hessian were taken prisoners, and sent in.

27th.—In the forenoon, a heavy cannonade was heard towards Fort Washington. Thirteen Hessians and two or three British soldiers were sent in on this day. From the American camp to the west-south-

west,

weſt, there appeared to be a very commanding height, worthy of attention. The Commander in Chief ordered the General Officers who were off duty, to attend him to reconnoitre this ground, on this morning. When arrived at the ground, although very commanding, it did not appear ſo much ſo, as other grounds to the north, and almoſt parallel with the left of the army, as it was then formed. "Yonder," ſays Major-Gen. Lee, pointing to the grounds juſt mentioned, "is the ground we ought to occupy." "Let us then go and view it," replied the Commander in Chief. When on the way, a light-horſeman came up in full gallop, his horſe almoſt out of breath, and addreſſed Gen. Waſhington—"The Britiſh are on the camp, Sir." The General obſerved—"Gentlemen, we have now other buſineſs than reconnoitring," putting his horſe in full gallop for the camp, and followed by the other officers. When arrived at Head-Quarters, the Adjutant-General [Read,] who had remained at camp, informed the Commander in Chief, that the guards had been all beat in, and the whole American army were now at their reſpective poſts, in order of battle. The Commander in Chief turned round to the officers, and only ſaid, "Gentlemen, you will repair to your reſpective poſts, and do the beſt you can." Our General, on arriving at his own diviſion, found them all in the lines; and, from the height of his poſt, found that the firſt attack was directed againſt the Americans on Chaderton's Hill. The little river Brunx, which ran between the American right and this hill, after running round its north ſide, turned and ran down on the eaſt and ſouth-eaſt. The Britiſh advanced in two columns. At this inſtant, the cannonade was briſk on both ſides; directed by the Britiſh acroſs the hollow and Brunx, againſt the Americans on the hill, and by them returned. Almoſt

moſt at the ſame inſtant, the right column, compoſed of Britiſh troops, preceded by about 20 light-horſe in full gallop, and brandiſhing their ſwords, appeared on the road leading to the court-houſe, and now directly in the front of our General's diviſion. The light-horſe leaped the fence of a wheat-field, at the foot of the hill, on which Col. Malcolm's regiment was poſted; of which the light-horſe were not aware, until a ſhot from Lieut. Fenno's field-piece gave them notice, by ſtriking in the midſt of them, and a horſeman pitching from his horſe. They then wheeled ſhort about, galloped out of the field as faſt as they came in, rode behind a little hill in the road, and faced about; the tops of their caps only being viſible to our General, where he ſtood. The column came no further up the road, but wheeled to the left by platoons, as they came up; and, paſſing through a bar, or gateway, directed their head towards the troops on Chaderton's Hill, now engaged. When the head of the column had got nearly acroſs the lot, their front got out of ſight; nor could the extent of their rear be now diſcovered. The ſun ſhone bright, their arms glittered, and perhaps troops never were ſhewn to more advantage, than theſe now appeared. The whole now halted; and for a few minutes, the men all ſat down in the ſame order in which they ſtood, no one appearing to move out of his place. The cannonade continued briſk acroſs the Brunx. A part of the left column, compoſed of Britiſh and Heſſians, forded the river, and marched along under the cover of the hill, until they had gained ſufficient ground to the left of the Americans; when, by facing to the left, their column became a line, parallel with the Americans. When they briſkly aſcended the hill, the firſt column reſumed a quick march. As the troops, which were advancing to the attack, aſcended the hill, the cannonade on the ſide of the

Britiſh

Britiſh ceaſed; as their own men became expoſed to their fire, if continued. The fire of ſmall-arms was now very heavy, and without any diſtinction of ſounds. This led ſome American officers, who were looking on, to obſerve that the Britiſh were worſted, as their cannon had ceaſed firing; but a few minutes evinced that the Americans were giving way. They moved off the hill in a great body, neither running, nor obſerving the beſt order. The Britiſh aſcended the hill very ſlowly; and when arrived at its ſummit, formed and dreſſed their line, without the leaſt attempt to purſue the Americans. The loſs on the ſide of the Americans was inconſiderable; that of the Britiſh was not then known. The Britiſh having got poſſeſſion of this hill, it gave them a vaſt advantage of the American lines, almoſt down to the centre.

29th.—The Britiſh began to throw up ſome ſmall works on the hill, of which they had got poſſeſſion. The Americans were drawing back; and a poſition was to be taken on the high ſtrong grounds, before in the rear of a part of the army. The left of our General's diviſion was not to move; but the remainder of his diviſion, and all the other diviſions of the army, were to fall back and form, nearly eaſt and weſt. About this time, Col. Laſher, who belonged to our General's diviſion, (and who had been left with his regiment to garriſon Fort Independence, near Kingſbridge) ſent an expreſs, who paſſed the enemy in the night, to know what he ſhould do, the regiment growing weak and ſickly. Our General applied to the Commander in-Chief, to know his pleaſure, who directed, that the Colonel ſhould give notice to Col. Magaw, who commanded at Fort Waſhington, that he might take away the cannon, ſtores, &c. and that Col. Laſher, after deſtroying the barracks, huts, &c. ſhould join the army, which he

ſoon

ſoon effected. This day, 3 priſoners were ſent in; and the Americans were now throwing up ſome ſtrong works on the high grounds.

30th.—The Britiſh remained upon the ground they had taken.

31ſt.—The Britiſh continued as before, throwing up a work, &c. At night, the Americans evacuated their works on the plain, near late Head-Quarters, ſetting fire to ſeveral barns, and one houſe, which contained forage, and ſome ſtores that could not be removed.

November 1ſt.—In the morning, the Britiſh advanced with a number of field-pieces, to the north of the road, near late Head-Quarters, (a heavy column appearing behind on the hill, ready to move forward) and commenced a furious cannonade on our General's diviſion, which was nobly returned by Capt. Lieut. Bryant and Lieut. Jackſon, of the artillery. Our General's firſt anxiety, was for Col. Malcolm's regiment on the hill, to the eaſt of the hollow on the left, leſt the enemy ſhould puſh a column into the hollow, and cut the regiment off from the diviſion. He therefore ordered Maj. Keith, one of his Aids, to gallop over, and order Col. Malcolm to come off immediately, with Lieut. Fenno's artillery: But, upon a more critical view of the ground in the hollow, (at the head of which there was a heavy ſtone wall, well ſituated to cover a body of troops to throw a heavy fire directly down it, while an oblique fire could be thrown in on both ſides) he ordered Maj. Pollard, his other aid, to gallop after Keith, and countermand the firſt order, and direct the Colonel to remain at his poſt, and he ſhould be ſupported. A ſtrong regiment was ordered to the head of the hollow, to occupy the wall. The cannonade was briſk on both ſides, through which the two Aids-de-camp paſſed, in going and returning.

At

At this inſtant, Gen. Waſhington rode up to the hill. His firſt queſtion to our General, was, "How is your diviſion?" He was anſwered, "They are all in order." "Have you," ſaid the Commander in Chief, "any troops on the hill over the hollow?" He was anſwered, "Malcolm's regiment is there." "If you do not call them off immediately," ſays the General, "you may loſe them, if the enemy puſh a column up the hollow." He was anſwered, that even in that caſe, their retreat ſhould be made ſafe; that a ſtrong regiment was poſted at the head of the hollow, behind the wall; that this regiment, with the oblique fire of the diviſion, would ſo check the enemy, as to allow Malcolm to make a ſafe retreat. The Commander in Chief concluded by ſaying, "Take care that you do not loſe them." The artillery of the diviſion was ſo well directed, as to throw the Britiſh artillery-men ſeveral times into confuſion; and finding that they could not here make any impreſſion, drew back their pieces, the column not advancing. The Britiſh artillery now made a circuitous movement, and came down toward the American right. Here, unknown to them, were ſome 12 pounders; upon the diſcharge of which, they made off with their field-pieces as faſt as their horſes could draw them. A ſhot from the American cannon, at this place, took off the head of a Heſſian artillery-man. They alſo left one of the artillery horſes dead on the field. What other loſs they ſuſtained was not known. Of our General's diviſion, one man only, belonging to Col. Paulding's regiment of New-York troops, was killed. The Britiſh made no other attempt on the Americans, while they remained at White Plains. The two armies lay looking at each other, and within long cannon-ſhot. In the night time, the Britiſh lighted up a vaſt number of fires, the weather growing pretty cold. Theſe fires, ſome on the level

ground, ſome at the foot of the hills, and at all diſtances to their brows, ſome of which were lofty, ſeemed to the eye to mix with the ſtars, and to be of different magnitudes. The American ſide, doubtleſs, exhibited to them a ſimilar appearance. On this day, our General ordered three redoubts, with a line in front, to be thrown up on the ſummit of his poſt, ſo conſtructed, that the whole of them could make a defence, and ſupport each other at the ſame time, if attacked. Theſe, to the enemy, in whoſe view they fully were, muſt have appeared very formidable, although they were deſigned principally for defence againſt ſmall-arms; and perhaps works were never raiſed quicker. There were the ſtalks of a large corn-field at the ſpot: the pulling theſe up in hills, took up a large lump of earth with each. The roots of the ſtalks and earth on them, placed in the face of the works, anſwered the purpoſe of ſods, or facines. The tops being placed inwards, as the looſe earth was thrown upon them, became as ſo many ties to the work, which was carried up with a diſpatch ſcarcely conceivable.

The Britiſh, as they ſay, had meditated an attack on the Americans, which was only prevented by the wetneſs of the night. Be this as it may, our General had ordered his diviſion, at evening roll-call, to be at their alarm-poſts, (which they every morning manned, whilſt at this place) half an hour ſooner than uſual. He had then no other reaſon for doing this, than the near poſition of the enemy, and the probability that they would ſoon make an attack: But the Commander in Chief muſt have made ſome other diſcovery; for, after our General was in bed, Col. Carey, who was one of the Aids-de-camp of Gen. Waſhington, came to the door of his marque, and calling to him, informed him that the whole army were to be at their alarm-poſts, the next morning,

ing, half an hour ſooner than uſual, and that he was to govern himſelf accordingly. Our General replied, that he had fortunately given ſuch orders to his diviſion, at evening roll-call. He therefore neither got up himſelf, nor diſturbed any other of his diviſion.*

3d.—The centinels reported, that, during the preceding night, they heard the rumbling of carriages to the ſouth-eaſtward; and it was apprehended that the Britiſh were changing their poſition.

5th.—The Britiſh centinels were withdrawn from their advanced poſts. It was apprehended that they meant a movement. The American army was immediately ordered under arms. At 2 o'clock, P. M. the enemy appeared, formed on Chaderton's Hill, and on ſeveral hills to the weſtward of it. Several reconnoitring parties, who were ſent out, reported that the enemy were withdrawing. About 12 o'clock, this night, a party of the Americans wantonly ſet fire to the court-houſe, Dr. Graham's houſe, and ſeveral other private houſes, which ſtood between the two armies. This gave great diſguſt to the whole American army, and drew from the Commander in Chief the following paragraph, in his orders of the 6th: "It is with the utmoſt aſtoniſhment and abhorrence, the General is informed, that ſome baſe and cowardly wretches have, laſt night, ſet fire to the court-houſe, and other buildings which the enemy left. The army may rely upon it, that they ſhall be brought to juſtice, and meet with the puniſhment they deſerve." The

* *Stedman* miſtakes greatly in his hiſtory, where, in vol. I. page 216, he aſſerts, that the Americans "evacuated their lines on the morning of the *firſt*, and retired acroſs the Croton River to North-Caſtle, ſetting fire, in their retreat, to all the houſes on White Plains." The Americans did not quit their ſtrong poſition at the *back* of White Plains, until the Britiſh had retreated towards Kingſbridge, as far as Dobb's Ferry, and had there encamped, as is fully ſhewn in theſe Memoirs.

The Britiſh were moving down towards Dobb's Ferry. A detachment from the American army was ſent out in the morning to haraſs their rear, but could not come up with them.

7th.—Several deſerters came in from the enemy: they reported that they were removing towards New-York. The reconnoitring parties diſcovered them encamped near Dobb's Ferry. They were foraging grain and hay, and driving in the cattle. Two ſtore-ſhips had run up paſt Fort Waſhington.

8th.—The enemy continued encamped at and below Dobb's Ferry. A new diſpoſition of the American army was now to take place. The ſouthern troops were to croſs over into the Jerſies. Gen. Lee, with his own, Spencer's, and Sullivan's diviſions, were to remain, to ſecure and bring off the ſtores; and were then to follow into the Jerſies. Our General was ordered to march with his diviſion to Peek's Kill.

9th.—The diviſion moved from near White Plains, and the ſame night halted at North-Caſtle.

10th.—In the afternoon, the diviſion reached Peek's Kill. Gen. Waſhington arrived at the ſame place about ſunſet. It was this day learnt, that Gen. Carleton's army in Canada, after puſhing the Americans, in that quarter, from poſt to poſt, until they arrived at Ticonderoga, juſt made their appearance before that place, and then retired towards Quebec.

11th.—The Commander in Chief directed our General to attend him in taking a view of Fort Montgomery, and the other works up the river. Lord Sterling, Generals James and George Clinton, Gen. Mifflin and others were of the company. They went as far up the river as Conſtitution Iſland, which is oppoſite to Weſt-Point, the latter of which was not then taken poſſeſſion of; but the glance of the eye at it, without going on ſhore, evinced that this

poſt

poſt was not to be neglected. There was a ſmall work and a block-houſe on Conſtitution Iſland. Fort Montgomery was in conſiderable forwardneſs.

12th.—The Commander in Chief directed our General to ride early in the morning with him, to reconnoitre the grounds at the Gorge of the Highlands; and, on his return, gave him the command of the troops and poſts in the Highlands, on both ſides of the river, with written inſtructions to ſecure and fortify them with all poſſible expedition, making a diſtribution of his troops to the different poſts; and, at about 10 o'clock, A. M. Gen. Waſhington croſſed over the river into the Jerſies.

13th.—Our General made a diſpoſition of the troops under his command, to their ſeveral deſtinations. Col. Huntington's and Tyler's regiments, to the weſt ſide of the Hudſon, to Sidnum's Bridge on Ramapaugh River, to cover the paſſes into the Highlands, on that ſide: Preſcott's, Ward's and Wyllis's regiments, of Parſons's brigade, (as were the other two regiments) to the ſouth entrance of the Highlands, beyond Robinſon's Bridge: Gen. George Clinton's brigade, to the heights above Peek's Kill Landing: Gen. Scott's brigade, with the three regiments of Gen. Parſons's brigade: Gen. James Clinton, with the troops under his command, were at the forts up the river. The Britiſh moved down, near to Kingſbridge.

On the 16th, the Britiſh made their attack on Fort Waſhington. Gen. Knyphauſen, with a heavy column of Heſſians, advanced by Kingſbridge. They were diſcovered by the Americans, from the high grounds north of Fort Waſhington, as the day broke; and cannonaded from the field-pieces, placed at this advanced poſt. The Heſſian column divided into two; the right aſcending the ſtrong broken ground towards Spitten-Devil Creek; the left nearer

to

to the road, towards the Gorge. The firſt obtained the ground without much difficulty; but the Americans made a moſt noble oppoſition againſt the latter, and, for a conſiderable time, kept them from aſcending the hill, making a terrible ſlaughter among them; but the great ſuperiority of the aſſailants, with an unabating firmneſs, finally prevailed: their loſs was greater here than at any other place. Meanwhile, the Britiſh croſſed Haarlem Creek, in two different places, charged, and finally routed the Americans on that ſide, and poſſeſſed themſelves of the ſtrong poſt of Laurel Hill, on the other ſide of the road, from Fort Waſhington, and not very diſtant from it; Lord Percy at the ſame time advancing, with the troops under his command on the iſland, towards the fort on that ſide. The Americans, now generally driven from their out-works, retired to the fort, which was crowded full. A ſingle ſhell, now dropping among them, muſt have made dreadful havock.

Gen. Waſhington was now a ſpectator of this diſtreſſing ſcene, from the high bank at Fort Lee, on the oppoſite ſide of the Hudſon; and having a wiſh to communicate ſomething to Col. Magaw, the commanding officer at Fort Waſhington, Capt. Gooch of Boſton, a brave and daring man, offered to be the bearer of it. He ran down to the river, jumped into a ſmall boat, puſhed over the river, landed under the bank, ran up to the fort, and delivered the meſſage—came out, ran and jumped over the broken ground, dodging the Heſſians, ſome of whom ſtruck at him with their pieces, and others attempted to thruſt him with their bayonets—eſcaping through them, he got to his boat, and returned to Fort Lee. The Britiſh had ſummoned Col. Magaw to ſurrender, and were preparing their batteries to play on the fort, when Col. Magaw thought it beſt to ſurrender the poſt, which he did accordingly, between two and three

three thouſand men becoming priſoners. The loſs in killed and wounded, on the American ſide was inconſiderable; but the loſs in priſoners was a ſerious blow indeed. The priſoners were marched to New-York; where, being crowded in priſons and ſugar-houſes, (many of them being militia from the Jerſey flying-camp, who had been ſent over to reinforce the garriſon, and were unuſed to a ſoldier's life, much leſs to the poiſonous ſtagnant air of a crowded priſon,) they fell ſick, and daily died, in a moſt ſhocking manner. It was common, on a morning, for the car-men to come and take away the bodies for burial, *by loads!*——O ye officers of the provoſt! to whatever nation or people you belong, when the unfortunate of your fellow-men are thus committed to your charge, clothe yourſelves with humanity, and ſoothe diſtreſs as far as in your power; for by this, you will ſecure a better reward than your preſent wages. And you who have the honour to command armies, when your victories have filled provoſts and priſons, think it not beneath you to viſit the priſons, that with your own eyes you may ſee the ſtate of your priſoners: for ſuch *viſits*, the great CAPTAIN OF YOUR SALVATION hath ſaid, ſhall be conſidered as made to Himſelf; while it alſo gives you a name among men cloſely allied to that of the conqueror. The truly brave are always humane.

Elated with the eaſy reduction of Fort Waſhington, the Britiſh determined to croſs into the Jerſies, and attack Gen. Waſhington on that ſide.

On the 18th, Lord Cornwallis, with a ſtrong body of the Britiſh forces, landed at Cloſter Landing, on the Jerſey ſide, above Fort Lee, the garriſon of which were obliged to leave that poſt; and ſome cannon, ſtores and proviſions, which could not be removed, fell into the hands of the enemy.

20th.

20th.—Juſt at evening, an expreſs, which our General had ſent down to Gen. Waſhington before he had any knowledge of what had happened, returned with a moſt alarming account of what he had ſeen with his own eyes, viz. that the Americans were rapidly retreating, and the Britiſh as rapidly purſuing. The Adjutant-General [Read] wiſhed to write to Gen. Lee; but he had neither pen, ink, or paper with him. The light-horſeman had a rough piece of wrapping-paper in his pocket, and the Adjutant-General had an old pencil. Bringing theſe two together, he wrote to Gen. Lee—"Dear General, we are flying before the Britiſh. I pray"——and the pencil broke. He then told the light-horſeman to carry the paper to Gen. Lee, and tell him that he was verbally ordered to add, after *I pray*, "you to puſh and join us." The light-horſeman, when he arrived at our General's, was both fatigued and wet. He requeſted that one of his brother horſemen might proceed to Gen. Lee; but he was told that no other could diſcharge the duty enjoined on him by the Adjutant-General, and that Gen. Lee might wiſh to make many inquiries of him. He was therefore refreſhed and puſhed on. Gen. Lee, inſtead of moving his diviſion, or any part of it, wrote our General, by the returning expreſs, the following letter.

CAMP, *Nov.* 21*ſt*, 1776.

"DEAR GENERAL,

"I HAVE juſt received a recommendation, not a poſitive order, from the General, to move the corps under my command to the other ſide of the river. This recommendation was, I imagine, on the preſumption that I had already moved nearer to Peek's Kill. There is no poſſibility of croſſing over Dobb's Ferry, or at any place lower than King's Ferry, which to us would be ſuch an immenſe round, that we could

could never anſwer any purpoſe. I muſt therefore deſire and requeſt, that you will order 2,000 of your corps, under a Brigadier-General, to croſs the river oppoſite the General, and wait his further orders. As ſoon as we have finiſhed a neceſſary job, I will replace this number from hence, which job will, I believe, be finiſhed to-morrow.

I am, dear General, your's,

(Signed) CHARLES LEE.

Gen. HEATH."

Upon receiving this letter from Gen. Lee, (for our General did not receive the leaſt hint from Gen. Waſhington, to move any part of the troops under his command, by the expreſs who brought the order to Lee) he took up his inſtructions from Gen. Waſhington, to ſee if he might dare to make any detachment; upon which he wrote Gen. Lee the following anſwer to his letter.

PEEK's KILL, *Nov. 21ſt*, 1776, 10 o'clock at night.

"DEAR GENERAL,

"I AM now to acknowledge the receipt of your favours, of this date, the former of which I had anſwered early in the evening. With reſpect to the latter, upon having recourſe to my inſtructions, I find they are ſuch as not to admit of moving any part of the troops from the poſts aſſigned to me, unleſs it be by expreſs orders from his Excellency, or to ſupport you, in caſe you are attacked. My inſtructions, among other things, are as follow:

"Your diviſion, with ſuch troops as are now at "Forts Montgomery, Independence and Conſtitu- "tion, are to be under your command, and remain "in this quarter, for the ſecurity of the above poſts, "and the paſſes through the Highlands, from this "place, and the one on the weſt ſide of Hudſon's

"River. Unneceſſary it is for me to ſay any thing "to evince the importance of ſecuring the land and "water communication through theſe paſſes, or to "prove the indiſpenſable neceſſity of uſing every ex- "ertion in your power, to have ſuch works erected "for the defence of them, as your own judgment, "aſſiſted by that of your Brigadiers and Engineer, "may ſhew the expediency of. You will not only "keep in view the importance of ſecuring theſe "paſſes, but the neceſſity of doing it without delay: "not only from the probability of the enemy's at- "tempting to ſeize them, but from the advanced "ſeaſon, which will not admit of any ſpade-work, af- "ter the froſt (which may daily be expected) ſets in.

"Loſe not a moment, therefore, in chooſing the "grounds on the eaſt and weſt ſide of the river, "on which your intended works are to be erected. "Let your men deſigned for each poſt be ſpeedily "allotted," &c.——

"After inſtructions ſo poſitive and preſſing, you will readily agree that it would be very improper, in me, to order any of the troops from poſts, to which they are ſo expreſsly aſſigned, and from buſineſs which in his Excellency's view is ſo very important. Add to this, their preſent diſpoſition is ſuch, that to collect any thing near the number you mention, would occaſion as great delay, and cauſe many of them to march nearly as far, as if ſent immediately from your quarter.

I am, dear General, with eſteem,
Your's reſpectfully,
(Signed) W. HEATH.

Gen. LEE."

This did not ſeem to ſatisfy Gen. Lee, who wrote our General the following:

"SIR,

CAMP, *Nov. 23d*, 1776.

"SIR,

"BY your mode of reaſoning, the General's inſtructions are ſo binding, that not a tittle muſt be broke through, for the ſalvation of the General and the army. I have ordered Glover's brigade to march up towards Peek's Kill, to put the paſſage of the Highlands out of danger; but I intend to take 2,000 from your diviſion with me into the Jerſies; ſo I muſt deſire that you will have that number in readineſs by the day after to-morrow, when I ſhall be with you early in the forenoon;

And am, Sir,

Your moſt obedient ſervant,

(Signed) CHARLES LEE.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To which our General returned the following anſwer:

PEEK'S KILL, *Nov. 24th*, 1776.

"SIR,

"BE my mode of reaſoning as it may, I conceive it to be my duty to obey my inſtructions, eſpecially thoſe which are poſitive and poignant, and that to deviate from them even in extreme caſes, would be an error; though perhaps an error on the right ſide.

"I can aſſure you, Sir, that I have the ſalvation of the General and army ſo much at heart, that the leaſt recommendation from him, to march my diviſion, or any part of them, over the river, ſhould have been inſtantly obeyed, without waiting for a poſitive order.

"My conduct muſt be approved or cenſured, as I adhere to, or depart from, my orders; and, as it is my duty, I ſhall ſtrictly abide by them, until they are countermanded in ſuch manner, as will juſtify a deviation

a deviation from them, to him who inſtructed me, and to the world.

"I ſhall be happy in being honoured with your company to-morrow;

And am, with reſpect and eſteem,
Your obedient humble ſervant,
(Signed) W. HEATH.

Gen. Lee."

After the foregoing was ſent off, our General reflected for a moment, that as circumſtances alter caſes, Gen. Waſhington being now preſſed, and the army with him but feeble, he might poſſibly wiſh for ſome aid from his diviſion. He therefore ſat down and wrote him a ſhort letter, ſtating in what manner he had diſpoſed of the troops under his command, and wiſhing to know his pleaſure whether any part of them ſhould join him; encloſing copies of the letters he had received from Gen. Lee, and of his anſwers. The expreſs was directed to make the utmoſt diſpatch out and returning, which he effected on the 26th, (ſeveral days before Gen. Lee got up to Peek's Kill) bringing with him the following letter from Secretary Harriſon.

NEWARK, *Nov. 25th*, 1776.

"DEAR GENERAL,

"I AM directed by his Excellency to acknowledge his receipt of your letter of yeſterday, and to inform you, the diſpoſition of the troops, mentioned in your former letter, has his approbation.

"In reſpect to the troops intended to come to this quarter, his Excellency never meant that they ſhould be from your diviſion. He has wrote Gen. Lee, ſince, ſo fully and explicitly upon the ſubject, that any miſapprehenſions he may have been under at firſt, muſt be now done away. He will moſt probably

ably have reached Peek's Kill before now, with his diviſion, and be puſhing to join us. No new event has taken place.

I am, Sir, very reſpectfully,
Your moſt obedient ſervant,
(Signed) R. H. HARRISON.
Maj. Gen. HEATH."

21ſt.—A heavy cannonade was heard towards Amboy.

22d.—Col. Tupper, who was down near Tappan, got up to King's Ferry. He brought off the two 12 pounders which were at Dobb's Ferry, and a quantity of proviſions. The ſame evening, our General ordered the Waſhington Galley to take ſtation at King's Ferry.

24th.—Our General gave orders for Clinton's and Scott's brigades to hold themſelves in readineſs to march to the Jerſey ſide.

25th.—Scott's brigade was ordered over to Haverſtraw, and Col. Tyler's regiment, then at Ramapaugh River, to march down to Tappan, to ſecure and bring off the proviſions which were at that place.

27th.—Capt Treadwell, of the artillery, with a three-pounder, was ordered to move over the river, and join Gen. Scott's brigade. It was learnt that many of the inhabitants of New-Jerſey, eſpecially in the neighbourhood of Hackenſack, were ſwearing allegiance to King George, taking letters of protection, &c.

28th.—Mr. Livingſton came from Congreſs, to adviſe with our General on meaſures to obſtruct the river. The ſame day, Capt. Harrod brought off from Tappan, a conſiderable quantity of pearl-aſh, bees-wax, oil, &c.

29th.—Two of the regiments of Gen. Clinton's brigade were ordered to move to Fort Conſtitution,

in

in order to attempt the forming of obſtructions in the river near Polipins Iſland.

30th.—Juſt before dinner, Gen. Sullivan arrived at our General's quarters; and in the afternoon Gen. Lee arrived. He called at the door; when our General waiting upon him, requeſted him to alight, he aſked if he could have a cup of tea, and was anſwered that he ſhould have a good one. Upon coming into the houſe, before he ſat down, he wiſhed to ſpeak in private, which being inſtantly granted, he told our General that, in a military view, or, to uſe his own words exactly, "In *point of law*, you are right; but in point of policy, I think you are wrong. I am going into the Jerſies for the ſalvation of America; I wiſh to take with me a larger force than I now have, and requeſt you to order 2,000 of your men to march with me." Our General anſwered, that he could not ſpare that number. He was then aſked to order 1,000; to which he replied, that the buſineſs might be as well brought to a point at once—that not a ſingle man ſhould march from the poſt by *his* order. Gen. Lee replied, that he would then order them himſelf. He was anſwered, that there was a wide difference between the two; that Gen. Lee was acknowledged by our General to be his ſenior; but, as he had received poſitive written inſtructions from him who was ſuperior to both, he would not *himſelf* break thoſe orders: If Gen. Lee was diſpoſed to counteract them, its being done by him could not be imputed to any other perſon; and that he knew the Commander in Chief did not intend any of the troops ſhould be removed from that poſt—having expreſſed it not only in his inſtructions, but alſo in a letter juſt received from him. On the letter being ſhewn to Gen. Lee, he obſerved, "The Commander in Chief is now at a diſtance, and does not know what is neceſſary here ſo well as I do"—aſked if he might be

be favoured with the return-book of the diviſion. Major Huntington, the Deputy Adjutant-General, was directed to hand it. Gen. Lee ran his eye over it, and ſaid, "I will take Preſcott's and Wyllis's regiments"—and turning to Major Huntington, ſaid, "You will order thoſe two regiments to march early to-morrow morning to join me." Our General, turning to the Major, ſaid, "Iſſue ſuch orders at your peril!" and then turning to Gen. Lee, addreſſed him: "Sir, if you come to this poſt, and mean to iſſue orders here, which will break thoſe poſitive ones which I have received, I pray you to do it completely yourſelf, and through your own Deputy Adjutant-General, who is preſent, and not draw me, or any of my family, in as partners in the guilt." Gen. Lee replied, "It is right. Col. Scammel, do you iſſue the order;" which he did, and Huntington communicated it to the regiments, who were now poſted at the Gorge of the mountains, near Robinſon's Bridge, afterwards called the Continental Village. Matters carried thus far, our General turned to Gen. Lee again: "Sir, I have one more requeſt to make, and that is, that you will be pleaſed to give me a certificate, that you *exerciſe command* at this poſt, and do order from it Preſcott's and Wyllis's regiments." Lee replied, "I do not know that I will comply with your requeſt." Gen. Clinton, who was preſent, obſerved, "Gen. Lee, you cannot refuſe a requeſt ſo reaſonable." Upon which Gen. Lee wrote as follows:

PEEK'S KILL, *Dec. 1ſt*, 1776.

"FOR the ſatisfaction of Gen. Heath, and at his requeſt, I do certify, that I am commanding officer, at this preſent writing, in this poſt, and that I have, in that capacity, ordered Preſcott's and Wyllis's regiments to march.

(Signed) CHARLES LEE, Maj. Gen."

Gen.

Gen. Lee, ſtepping out on the piazza, obſerved to an officer, "Gen. Heath is right." Early the next morning, the regiments moved from their cantonment towards Peek's Kill; but before they had reached it, Gen. Lee, now ready to paſs into the Jerſies, rode up to our General's door, and calling him, obſerved, "Upon further conſideration, I have concluded not to take the two regiments with me—you may order them to return to their former poſt." This conduct of Gen. Lee's appeared not a little extraordinary, and one is almoſt at a loſs to account for it. He had been a ſoldier from his youth, had a perfect knowledge of ſervice in all its branches, but was rather obſtinate in his temper, and could ſcarcely brook being croſſed in any thing in the line of his profeſſion. Gen. Lee took with him into the Jerſies ſome as good troops as any in the ſervice; but many of them were ſo deſtitute of ſhoes, that the blood left on the rugged frozen ground, in many places, marked the route they had taken; and a conſiderable number, unable to march, were left at Peek's Kill. The time of ſervice for which Gen. Scott's brigade was engaged to ſerve, expired, when the whole, except about 50, went home, notwithſtanding the generous encouragement offered them by their State, (New-York) if they would continue one month longer.

2d and 3d.—Gen. Lee's troops were paſſing the ferry. Gen. Carleton having returned into Canada, a number of Gen. Gates's regiments were now moving to reinforce Gen. Waſhington—their van as far as Morriſtown—the enemy as far as Brunſwick.

6th.—Intelligence was received, that on the 4th, about ſunſet, 70 ſail of ſhips of war and tranſports, paſſed in the ſound towards New-England. Our General immediately ſent off expreſſes to Gen. Waſhington, Gov. Trumbull, Mr. Bowdoin, at Boſton, the Convention of New-York, &c. 7th.

7th.—Three regiments, viz. Greaton's, Bond's, and Porter's, arrived off the landing from Albany, on their way to Gen. Washington. Matters now looked serious in Jersey. The British were extending themselves in all directions, and the inhabitants obliged to become passive, if not worse. Gen. Gates had ordered the troops, moving from the northward, to rendezvous at Goshen.

8th.—Our General wrote Gen. Lee, that the troops were moving on from the northward, and as Gen. Gates had not yet overtaken them, some of the commanding-officers appeared to wish for orders how to proceed. Gen. Washington, it was said, was as far as Trenton—Lee, the preceding night, as far as Pompton. A flag schooner came up from New-York, to obtain leave for some families to go in. A Parson Inglish was on board. Orders were given to treat the flag with politeness, and at the same time with proper precaution; and the business was laid before the Convention of the State.

The same day, Gen. Clinton, with two British and two Hessian brigades, with a squadron of ships under the command of Sir Peter Parker, took possession of Rhode-Island, without the loss of a man; the Americans quitting the island without making any opposition. Rhode-Island was a great acquisition to the British, for quarters, forage, and a safe harbour; but lessened their ability for other more important operations in the field.

On the evening of the 9th, our General received orders from the Commander in Chief, to move over the Hudson, with Parsons's brigade, and to move on so as to give protection to the country, and vigour to the cause in Jersey.

10th.—A little after noon, Parsons's brigade marched down to King's Ferry; the greatest alertness having

ing been discovered by both officers and men on the occasion.

11th.—About eleven o'clock, A. M. our General left Peek's Kill, and proceeded for the Jersies; on crossing King's Ferry, gave orders for the flag to be detained from returning until further orders. The troops crossed the ferry, and marched as far as Col. Hays' at Haverstraw. Huntington's and Tyler's regiments were ordered to advance from Ramapaugh Bridge to Paramus. Our General received a letter from Gen. Lee, in answer to the one he wrote on the 8th from Peek's Kill, as follows:

CHATHAM, *Dec. 9th*, 1776.

"DEAR GENERAL,

"I AM very much obliged to you for your welcome tidings; and have only to beg, that you will direct the regiments you speak of, to march without loss of time to Morristown. I sent an express to you last night, from the General, ordering your division over the river, which I confess, for my own part, I am heartily sorry for; as I think we shall be strong enough without you, and New-England, with your district, will be too bare of troops. I am in hopes here to re-conquer (if I may so express myself) the Jersies. It was really in the hands of the enemy before my arrival.

Adieu, dear Sir,

(Signed) CHARLES LEE.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

The foregoing letter appears very different from the former ones.

12th.—Early in the morning, the troops took up their line of march from Haverstraw, and before sun-set reached Tappan.

13th.

13th.—Sent out a reconnoitring party towards Hackenſack, to get intelligence, &c. This day, Gen. Lee was taken priſoner, near Chatham, by a party of light-horſe, commanded by Col. Harcourt. Lee took quarters at a ſmall diſtance from his troops: an inhabitant gave notice of it to Col. Harcourt, who was out reconnoitring near that neighbourhood, and who had the addreſs to take and carry him off.

14th.—Our General held up every appearance of moving to Paramus, and ſent off his baggage under eſcort to that place; and between 11 and 12 o'clock, marched briſkly for Hackenſack, having ſent orders for Huntington's and Tyler's regiments to move from Paramus at the ſame time. Buſkirk's regiment was at Hackenſack Bridge the preceding day, where they did duty, and it was expected they were ſtill at the ſame place. To ſurpriſe and take them was the object; but it was found that Buſkirk's men had moved the preceding day to Bergen, in order to draw new arms. The town was completely ſurpriſed, not having an idea that any but Britiſh troops were near them. One Britiſh ſoldier and 20 or 30 of their adherents, were taken, a number of arms, &c. and at the wharf, ſeveral veſſels loaded with hay, &c. on the point of ſailing for New-York. A brig had come to ſail in the morning, and run ſome diſtance down the river, and came to anchor. An officer with a party was ſent down to take her, and bring her up; but the wind was ſo ſtrong a-head that it could not be effected. The officer was then directed to deſtroy the veſſel, as ſhe had a large quantity of forage on board, deſtined for New-York; but it was ſaid, there were ſome valuable articles on board, which might be taken out and brought up in the boats. The orders were varied accordingly, with directions, that in caſe the enemy advanced before the buſineſs was completed, to ſet the brig on

fire.

fire. The boats brought up one load; but on returning to the brig, they discovered a body of the enemy advancing, when the brig was abandoned without being set on fire. The enemy immediately took possession of her. Among the articles taken out, was a large chest of plate. This was conveyed to Peek's Kill, and delivered to the Deputy Quarter-Master-General; and when the British afterwards destroyed the public stores at that place, the chest of plate was removed by the Quarter-Master into Connecticut; where afterwards Gen. Parsons, in behalf of the officers and soldiers of the division, filed a libel in the Maritime Court, and the officer who boarded the vessel, filed one in his own behalf. On trial, the Court adjudged the plate to the latter, although he boarded the vessel in obedience to express orders. About 100 barrels of flour, which had been abandoned by the Americans, when they retreated before Lord Cornwallis, were recovered and sent off; and about 100 arms were also secured, with a quantity of rum, gin, &c. In the evening, as two or three American officers were walking along the street, a gentleman, who was an inhabitant, came up to them, and expressed his joy on the arrival of the troops, (supposing they were British.) The officers immediately conducted him to our General, and on entering the room informed him, that they came to introduce a friend who had joined them in the street, and who was able to give some important information. Our General expressed a high satisfaction, and wished to know what information he could give. He replied, that he heard there was a large body of rebels collecting up above them. He was asked if, in case these rebels should advance, any assistance could be afforded by the people of the town, and whether they could be depended on? He answered, there were a considerable number, and that they might

might be depended on. He was aſked, whether there was not a number in the town who were in favour of the rebels? He anſwered, that there was; but that they had ſeized and ſent off the principal ones among them, and that now the others dared not ſhew themſelves. The joke was thus going on, when Col. Preſcott, who ſtood near him, holding his hat in his hand, in which there was a *red cockade*, (at that time a mark of the diſtinction of rank) the gentleman fixed his eye upon it, and his countenance immediately fell. He was then told, that thoſe whom he termed *rebels* were now in poſſeſſion of the place, and had now received his information. He was ordered into cuſtody.

15th.—All the waggons in the vicinity were collected, and the flour and other ſtores moved off to Paramus. Reconnoitring parties were ſent out to a diſtance, to obſerve the motions of the enemy.

16th.—The effects were generally removed, and about noon the reconnoitring parties reported, that the enemy were advancing on both ſides of the place. They were ſoon after diſcovered by the guard at Acquackanuck Bridge. A little before ſun-ſet, the troops left the town. A ſtrong rear-guard was ordered to remain on the high ground back of the town, until after dark, to light up a number of fires, and then to move on after the troops. Juſt before the diviſion left the town, Gen. George Clinton, attended by ſome light-horſe, joined the diviſion.

17th.—Reconnoitring parties were ſent out on all the roads.

18th.—Intelligence was received, that ſome of the Jerſey militia had had a ſkirmiſh with a body of Britiſh troops under Gen. Leſlie, near Springfield. Both parties retired. Of the militia, ſeveral were killed and wounded.

The

The Convention of New-York, greatly alarmed at the removal of our General with the continental troops, from the important paſſes of the Highlands, ſent a requeſt to Gen. Waſhington, deſiring that they might be ordered back again. To inſure diſpatch, they offered the expreſs extra pay. The Commander in Chief was pleaſed to grant their requeſt, and ordered our General to return to Peek's Kill, and re-occupy his former poſitions.

Our General, having received certain information that Buſkirk's regiment was at or near Bergen Woods, it was determined to ſtrike them. For this purpoſe, on the evening of the 19th, about 8 o'clock, Gen. Parſons, with 250 continental troops, and Gen. Clinton, with a like number of the militia of New-York, marched from Paramus church, and a covering party of 300 men was ordered to Tappan.

About 1 o'clock, the next morning, the detachment reached Bergen, and completely ſurpriſed the enemy's guard, making 22 men priſoners. The regiment was alarmed, and a pretty briſk ſkirmiſh enſued. The enemy were collecting, and it was judged beſt for the detachment to come off, having been ſo far victorious.

20th.—About 1 o'clock, P. M. the detachment returned to Paramus, having, in the ſhort interval of time, marched (out and returning) upwards of 40 miles. They brought back with them, beſides their priſoners, 16 new fire-locks, 6 horſes, and one waggon; having ſuſtained the loſs of one man. The enemy were ſuppoſed to have had ſeveral killed.

21ſt.—Orders were given for the troops to be ready to march early the next morning. The gentleman who was taken into cuſtody at Hackenſack, chagrined almoſt to death, had been ſpending his time, like April, in weeping and lowering; and much interceſſion having been made for his releaſe,

our

our General told him, that in caſe he would faithfully perform a piece of ſecret ſervice allotted to him, he ſhould be releaſed. This he performed with punctuality, and conſequently was ſet at liberty.

22d.—The troops marched from Paramus round by the ſide of Kakaat, to Clark's-Town, which they reached about ſun-ſet.

23d.—The troops took up their line of march, croſſed the Hudſon, and arrived at Peek's Kill.

24th.—Gave permiſſion for the flag to return to New-York, having on board the families of Mr. Engliſh, Moore, &c.

25th.—It was learnt that a body of Heſſian troops had not long before moved to the upper end of York Iſland. The militia of the State of New-York were this day beginning to come in.

26th.—A ſevere ſnow-ſtorm. Some of the militia from Maſſachuſetts had reached Danbury.

29th.—Intelligence was received from Providence, that a moſt valuable prize, taken by the ſhip Alfred, had arrived ſafe at Bedford, in Maſſachuſetts.

30th.—Col. Cheſter, of Connecticut, arrived at Peek's Kill, from Gen. Waſhington's camp, with the agreeable news, that on the preceding Thurſday morning, being the 26th, Gen. Waſhington, at the head of about 3,000 men, croſſed the Delaware, and attacked the enemy at Trenton, being about 1,600 Heſſians; and in about 35 minutes entirely defeated them. One Colonel, 2 Lieutenant-Colonels, 3 Majors, 4 Captains, 8 Lieutenants, 12 Enſigns, 1 Judge Advocate, 2 Surgeon's Mates, 92 Serjeants, 20 Drummers, 9 Muſicians, 25 Officers' ſervants, and 740 rank and file were taken priſoners, beſides the killed and wounded. Six pieces of braſs cannon, 12 drums, 4 ſtandards, 1200 ſmall-arms, 6 waggons, a number of ſwords, caps, &c. were the trophies of victory.

victory. The ſame day, Colonel Sparhawk's regiment of militia arrived from Maſſachuſetts.

31ſt.—Information was given, that a company of 60 diſaffected inhabitants were on their way to join the enemy. Parties were ſent out to intercept them.

1777. *January* 1ſt.—By a letter from General Waſhington, it appeared that the enemy were retreating towards Amboy. Generals Mifflin and Erving, and Col. Cadwallader had croſſed the Delaware, and Gen. Waſhington was about to follow them, and purſue the enemy.

2d.—Several infamous diſaffected perſons were taken and ſent in. The ſame day, Gen. Waſhington being at Trenton, Gen. Howe advanced to attack him; a cannonade enſued: Gen. Waſhington retired to the other ſide of the Mill Creek; and, as ſoon as it was dark, ordering a great number of fires to be lighted up, to deceive the enemy, ſtole a march, and at 9 o'clock next morning attacked three regiments of the enemy, who were poſted at Princetown, routed them, driving them from two ſmall redoubts. The enemy loſt, in killed, wounded and taken priſoners about 500. The American loſs was inconſiderable, except in the brave Gen. Mercer, of Virginia, who fell in this action, greatly regretted. In this manœuvre and action Gen. Waſhington exhibited the moſt conſummate generalſhip, and the Britiſh were ſtruck with conſternation. *Ambuſcade*, *ſurpriſe* and *ſtratagem* are ſaid to conſtitute the ſublime part of the art of war, and that he who poſſeſſes the greateſt reſource in theſe, will eventually pluck the laurel from the brow of his opponent. The ſtratagems of war are almoſt infinite, but all have the ſame object, namely, to deceive—to hold up an appearance of ſomething which is not intended, while under this maſk ſome important object is ſecured; and be a General never ſo brave, if he be unſkilled in the

the arts and ſtratagems of war, he is really to be pitied; for his bravery will but ſerve to lead him into thoſe wily ſnares which are laid for him.

3d.—Thirty-ſeven recruits going to Rogers, taken the preceding night, were brought in; and our General ordered out Capt. Graham at 12 o'clock at night, to intercept another gang.

4th.—Gen. Lincoln arrived from Maſſachuſetts; he had come on with a body of militia.

5th.—It was learnt that on the 1ſt inſt. Gen. Putnam took a large quantity of baggage, proviſions, &c. at Bordentown; and on the 3d, Gen. Waſhington's army came up with the rear of the enemy, at or near Rocky Hill, when a briſk action enſued, and the enemy were defeated, with the loſs of between 50 and 60 killed, and upwards of 100 taken priſoners, together with 6 pieces of cannon, and all their baggage: the Americans had 6 men killed. The ſame day, Col. Sparhawk's regiment of militia, from Maſſachuſetts, with two field-pieces, marched for King's Ferry, on their way to the Jerſies.

7th.—Our General received the following letter from Gen. Waſhington:

PLUCKEMIN, *Jan. 5th*, 1777.

"SIR,

"WE have made a ſucceſsful attack upon Princeton. General Howe advanced upon Trenton; we evacuated the town, and lay at the other ſide of the Mill Creek until dark; then ſtole a march, and attacked Princeton about 9 o'clock in the morning. There were three regiments quartered there. The killed, wounded, and priſoners taken, amounted to about 500. The enemy are in great conſternation; and as the preſent affords us a favourable opportunity to drive them out of the Jerſies, it has been determined in Council, that you ſhould move down to-

wards New-York with a conſiderable force, as if you had a deſign upon the city; that being an object of great importance, the enemy will be reduced to the neceſſity of withdrawing a conſiderable part of their force from the Jerſies, if not the whole, to ſecure the city. I ſhall draw the force on this ſide the North River together at Morriſtown, where I ſhall watch the motions of the enemy, and avail myſelf of every circumſtance. You will retain 4,000 of the militia, coming on from the New-England Governments for the expedition. You will act with great precaution, but avail yourſelf of every favourable opportunity of attacking the enemy, when you can do it to advantage.

"Gen. Lincoln muſt croſs the North River, and come on with the remainder of the militia to Morriſtown. Leave a ſufficient guard at the Highlands.

"You will alſo have as many boats collected together, or in ſuch a manner as you may always avail yourſelf of them, if it ſhould be found expedient for your troops or any part of them to croſs the North River, at Dobb's Ferry, or any other of the landings.

I am, &c.

(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

Gen. HEATH."

Preparations for the before mentioned movement were immediately put in train. The militia and volunteers were coming in.

8th.—Gen. Parſons went down to King-ſtreet.

9th.—The remainder of Col. Sparhawk's and Col. Whitney's regiments paſſed over the river, to join Gen. Waſhington.

10th.—Col. Froſt's regiment marched to North-Caſtle, and Gen. Scott's militia to White Plains.

11th.

11th.—A number of Britiſh officers, taken at Princeton, paſſed Peek's Kill, on their way to Connecticut. The ſame day it was learnt, that on the 8th, Gen. Maxwell, with the Jerſey militia, and ſome continental troops, routed the enemy at Elizabeth-Town, where he took 50 Highlanders, a ſchooner loaded with baggage, and fell in with a party of 30 Waldeckers, whom he alſo took priſoners.

12th.—Gen. Moulton from Maſſachuſetts, and Col. Gilman from New-Hampſhire, came to camp. A number of Britiſh priſoners, taken in the Jerſies, paſſed Peek's Kill, on their way to Connecticut.

13th.—Our General moved to the ſouthward, and reached North-Caſtle juſt before ſun-ſet, where he found part of four regiments had arrived, and Gen. Scott's militia of New-York had moved down to Wright's Mills.

14th.—Our General moved to King-ſtreet to Mr. Clap's—about 3,000 militia had arrived, and Gen. Lincoln's diviſion marched to Tarrytown on this day. The Commander in Chief in another letter had intimated that Gen. Lincoln, inſtead of moving on to join him, ſhould ſtay on the eaſt ſide of the Hudſon, and join in the expedition.

15th.—The Connecticut volunteers marched from King-ſtreet to New Rochelle, and Gen. Scott's brigade to Stephen Ward's. Plenty of proviſions were arriving. A deſerter came in from the enemy, and gave an account of their ſituation and numbers.

17th.—At night the three diviſions began to move towards Kingſbridge; Gen Lincoln's, from Tarrytown, on the Albany road; Generals Wooſter and Parſons's, from New Rochelle and Eaſt-Cheſter, and Gen. Scott's in the centre from below White Plains.

The

The ſeveral diſtances and rate of marching were ſo we calculated, that, on the 18th, juſt before ſunriſe, the three diviſions, although ſo far apart, arrived at the out-poſts of the enemy almoſt at the ſame inſtant. Gen. Lincoln's on the heights above Col. Van Cortland's; Wooſter's at Williams's; and Scott's on the back of Volentine's. Our General, who moved with the centre diviſion, knew that Volentine's houſe was the quarters of one of the guards; he did not know but it might be defended: as he approached it, he ordered Capt. Lieut. Bryant to advance a field-piece to the advance-guard, and if there was any oppoſition from the houſe, to cannonade it immediately. He then ordered 250 men from the head of the column (as it was moving on) to incline to the right, and by a double ſtep to puſh into the hollow, between the houſe and the fort, to cut off the guard who were at the houſe, in caſe they ſhould run towards the latter. At this inſtant, two light-horſemen who had been ſent out by the enemy as the day broke to reconnoitre the vicinity, came unexpectedly at the deſcent of a hill, plump upon the head of Wooſter's column. They attempted to turn about, but before it could be fully effected, a field-piece was diſcharged at them; one of them was pitched from his horſe and taken priſoner, the other galloped back to the fort, holloing as he paſſed, "The rebels! The rebels!" This ſet all the out-guards and pickets running to the fort, leaving in ſome places their arms, blankets, tools, proviſions, &c. behind them. Thoſe who fled from Volentine's, and the *Negro Fort*, were fired at as they ran, but none were killed: one, who could not run ſo faſt as the reſt, was taken priſoner. Ten muſquets were taken at Volentine's houſe. The guard above Van Cortland's was as completely ſurpriſed as the others,

where

where Gen. Lincoln took about 40 arms, ſome blankets, &c. &c. The left and centre diviſions moved into the hollow, between Volentine's houſe and the fort, from whence our General immediately ſent a ſummons to the commanding-officer of the fort to ſurrender. The Commandant of the fort, and a conſiderable part of the garriſon, being Heſſians, the ſummons held out to theſe generous terms. The anſwer, which was verbal, was a refuſal to ſurrender. A detachment with two field-pieces was ordered to move to the ſouth of the fort, to a hill above Haarlem Creek, not far from the New Bridge. When the detachment arrived at this place, a battalion of Heſſians appeared drawn up on the ſide of the hill juſt within Kingſbridge, and back of Hyatt's tavern. Our General ordered the artillery to cannonade them immediately. The firſt ſhot juſt cleared the right of the battalion, nearly a platoon ſettling down as the ſhot paſſed them, which entered the bank cloſe behind them. The ſecond ſhot paſſed about the centre of the battalion, when to the amount of a grand diviſion ſettled down, which was an evidence that they would not ſtand much longer. One of the pieces was ordered to be drawn lower down the hill; on which the battalion quitted their ground, and marched off as faſt as they could without running, to get behind the redoubt and hill at the bridge, receiving one ſhot more as they were turning round the point. It was not ſuſpected that the enemy had any cannon in the redoubt within the bridge, but they now began to cannonade the artillery-men who had deſcended the hill, who had to draw up their piece as faſt as poſſible, which they effected without any loſs, but received three or four ſhot quite among them, before they could reach the top of the hill.

This

This ſucceſs at the out-poſts flew through the country, and was ſoon magnified to a reduction of the fort, and capture of the garriſon. It reached Gen. Waſhington long before the official account, and he had communicated the report to Congreſs; hence a double diſappointment, when the true ſtate of facts was received.

19th.—The enemy cannonaded from the fort, and killed one American, as the guards were relieving at the Negro Fort. It was determined to make an attempt to cut off the battalion within Kingſbridge, early the next morning, by paſſing a ſtrong detachment over Spitten-Devil Creek on the ice, which, however, was not now very ſtrong, but the weather was cold. One thouſand were detached for the purpoſe; but the weather having grown warm in the night, the ice was judged, by the unanimous opinion of all the General Officers on the ground, to be too hazardous on the morning of the 20th to venture the attempt. On this day there was a cannonade on both ſides, and the enemy on the iſland ſide were thrown into much confuſion. Our General obſerving that when the enemy within the iſland were cannonaded acroſs Haarlem Creek, they ſheltered themſelves behind the little hill near the bridge, next to Spitten-Devil Creek, on this afternoon he rode round on to Tippit's Hill, which was in its rear, and found that a field-piece drawn up on that ſide would leave the enemy no hiding place.

21ſt.—A cannonade on both ſides. In the afternoon a field-piece was hauled up to Tippit's Hill, and the enemy were cannonaded both in front and rear: they were thrown into the utmoſt confuſion: ſome ſecured themſelves in their redoubt, others under the banks: ſome lay flat on the ground, and ſome betook themſelves to the cellars; ſo that in a

ſhort

ſhort time there was no object for the gunners. The weather had now grown very moderate.

22d.—There was a pretty ſmart ſkirmiſh with the enemy near the fort. This day our General ordered a number of chandeliers, faſcines, &c. to be made; and having nothing but light field-pieces with him, in order to keep up an appearance of a ſerious deſign on the fort, he ſent to North-Caſtle, where was a *field* braſs 24-pounder and ſome howitzers, to bring forward the former and one of the latter.

23d.—A ſmart ſkirmiſh took place juſt before duſk, in the broken ground near the ſouth ſide of the fort; an Enſign and one man belonging to the New-York militia were killed, and five wounded; the loſs of the enemy unknown, as it was cloſe under the fort.

24th.—Exceſſive ſtormy. Gen. Lincoln's diviſion, who were in huts in the woods, back of Col. Van Cortland's, were obliged to quit their ground, and move back into houſes where they could find them; ſome of them as far as Dobb's Ferry; with the loſs of a great many cartridges, from the badneſs of the boxes. The fall of rain was ſo great as to cauſe a great freſh in the Brunx, the water running over the bridge by Williams's.

25th.—Early in the morning, the enemy made a ſally towards Delaney's Mills, where they ſurpriſed and routed the guard, wounding ſeveral, but not killing or taking any of them; and a regiment near that place quitted their quarters. Emboldened by this ſucceſs, about 10 o'clock, A. M. they made a powerful ſally towards Volentine's, inſtantly driving the guards and pickets from the Negro Fort and Volentine's houſe; puſhing on with great impetuoſity, keeping up a briſk fire, the balls paſſing at Williams's houſe ſufficiently ſtrong to do execution. The retreating guards

guards threw themſelves into the old redoubt on the north ſide of the road, to the weſt of the bridge; on which, the enemy immediately lined a ſtrong ſtone wall, a few rods diſtant to the ſouthweſt. Two regiments of the militia being at this inſtant formed in the road near Williams's, and the horſes in the limbers of the field-pieces; our General ordered Capt. Bryant to ford over the bridge with his piece, and the militia to follow and cover the artillery. When Capt. Bryant had aſcended almoſt to the top of the hill, to prevent his horſes being ſhot, he unlimbered, and the men took the drag-ropes; but the aſcent of the hill was ſuch, that they were obliged to drag the piece almoſt within piſtol-ſhot, before the ground would admit the piece to be ſo depreſſed as to bear on the enemy. The moment this was effected, a round ſhot opened a breach in the wall, four or five feet wide; a ſecond ſhot in leſs than a minute opened another, when the enemy fled back to the fort with the greateſt precipitation. Of the Americans, two were killed and a number wounded.

27th.—The braſs 24-pounder and howitzer were brought up, and ordered to open upon the fort; on the third diſcharge of the former, ſhe ſprang her carriage; nor were there any *live* ſhells for the howitzer, there being none at North-Caſtle; nor was a regular cannonade or bombardment of the fort ever contemplated. Every attempt was now made, by feint and otherwiſe, to draw the enemy out of the fort. A detachment was ſent down to Morriſania, to light up a great number of fires in the night, to induce the enemy to ſuppoſe that a body of Americans were collecting at that place, with a deſign to croſs on to New-York Iſland, at or near Haarlem; and to heighten this, ſeveral large boats were ſent for, and brought forward on carriages. The Britiſh

guard

guard on Montreſor's Iſland were ſo much alarmed at this, as to ſet the buildings on fire, and flee to New-York. A brigade of the Britiſh were ſaid to have moved towards Fort Waſhington; and orders had been ſent to Rhode-Iſland, for a detachment to be ſent from thence.

29th.—There was the appearance of a ſevere ſnow-ſtorm coming on, when all the General Officers on the ground, viz. beſides our General, *Lincoln*, *Wooſter*, *Scott* and *Ten Broeck*, were unanimouſly of opinion that the troops ought to move back before the ſtorm came on, to places where they could be covered from the inclemency of the weather, as there was no artillery to batter the fort, and from firſt to laſt they were unanimouſly oppoſed to any idea of an aſſault or ſtorm of the fort with the militia, and the principal object being now to ſecure and bring off or deſtroy the forage, which could be as well done where the troops could have covering, as to haraſs them in the open fields by multiplying guards, or their being conſtantly expoſed in the ſcattered houſes to be ſurpriſed and cut off. For theſe ſeveral reaſons, the troops were ordered as ſoon as it grew dark to move back, Gen. Lincoln's diviſion to Dobb's Ferry and Tarry-Town, Gen. Wooſter's to New Rochelle, and Gen. Scott's to White Plains; the guards to remain at their poſts and alert, until the troops were all moved off, and then to form rear guards on the ſeveral roads, following the troops to whom they reſpectively belonged; all of which was performed in good order, in a very heavy fall of ſnow.

30th.—The ſtorm cleared up, when 15 ſhips, 1 brig, 2 ſchooners, and 2 ſloops came too, between Heart and City Iſlands; they were from the eaſtward, and were ſuppoſed to have troops on board.

The troops on this expedition, as it was called, were in a very hazardous ſituation, and had continued in it from the morning of the 18th to the evening of the 29th; they were entirely a body of militia, except a few artillery-men. So apprehenſive of this being a critical ſituation was the Commander in Chief, in the year 1780, when Gen. Sir Henry Clinton menaced the French army at Rhode-Iſland, and had embarked his troops on board tranſports for the purpoſe of proceeding to that place, and Gen. Waſhington had determined to move down towards Kingſbridge, to induce Sir Henry to give up his deſign by menacing New-York, our General being then at Rhode-Iſland with the French army, Gen. Waſhington wrote him on the 31ſt of July from Robinſon's Houſe in the Highlands—among other things, "*You know the critical ſituation in which this army will be in a poſition below.*" This was undoubtedly a very juſt obſervation; but if the Commander in Chief, with the whole American army in 1780, well armed and highly diſciplined, ſhould ſo juſtly judge at the diſtance of 30 miles from the ſpot, what ſhall we ſay of thoſe brave militia men, who continued in the poſition itſelf, for more than *ten days* in the midſt of winter.

Whenever an enterpriſe is to be attempted in the teeth of an enemy, it ſhould be a *daſh* and away.

31ſt.—A *cordon* of troops was ordered to be formed, to extend from Dobb's Ferry to Maroneck.

February 1ſt.—Foraging being now the object, a large number of teams were ſent out towards Maroneck, and upwards of 80 loads of forage were brought off. Twelve more ſhips, 4 of which were of 40 guns, came down the Sound the preceding day.

2d.—Col. Humphries, of New-York, arrived with a regiment of militia from Albany county, to continue in ſervice ſix weeks. 3d.

3d.—There was another grand forage.

6th.—A ſtrong detachment under the command of Col. Enos was ſent toward Fort Independence, to attempt to ſurpriſe ſome of the enemy's out-poſts, but nothing could be effected. The ſmall-pox was now making its appearance in the neighbourhood.

8th.—There was a grand forage to the lower parts of Weſt-Cheſter county. A row-galley and a ſloop were coming up the North River. The covering party to the foragers on this day was nearly 1,000 ſtrong, and large quantities of forage were brought off.

10th.—Our General rode to Peek's Kill, where he arrived a little after dark. Gen. Lincoln's troops were on their march to join Gen. Waſhington. Our General had obtained leave of the Commander in Chief, to make a ſhort viſit to New-England, under an injunction to return very early.

12th.—About 10 o'clock, he left Peek's Kill, and arrived at his houſe in Roxbury on the 19th, about ſun-ſet.

March 14th.—Our General ſet out from Roxbury, on his way back to the army; but before he had got to Watertown, an expreſs overtook him, with orders from Gen. Waſhington, for him to take the command of the Eaſtern Department; Gen. Ward having applied for leave to reſign the command, meaning to retire from the ſervice: he therefore turned back, and rode into Boſton.

This year, 1777, formed an important era in the annals of America. Congreſs had determined to make great exertions to drive the Britiſh troops from America; for this purpoſe, they had ordered 88 battalions to be raiſed in the United States, 15 of which fell to the ſhare of Maſſachuſetts. Beſides the foregoing 88 battalions, they alſo ordered the raiſing

raiſing of 16 others, called the additional battalions; and of theſe, three were raiſing in Maſſachuſetts, viz. Jackſon's, Lee's and Henley's; beſides Armand's Legion, Artificers, &c. The arming, equipping and ſending on the recruits—furniſhing the Recruiting Officers with bounty monies—and the forwarding on immenſe quantities of all kinds of military ſtores, (for Maſſachuſetts might now be called the great magazine of military ſtores of the Union, partly on account of her own reſources, managed by the indefatigable induſtry of her Board of War)—and the arrivals of public ſtores here and at Portſmouth, called for the utmoſt diligence and exertion of the commanding General. The Commander in Chief had given directions for the troops to be forwarded on, with all poſſible diſpatch, to Ticonderoga.

20th.—Maj. Gen. Ward reſigned the command of the Eaſtern Department to our General, who took the command accordingly.

23d.—A detachment of Britiſh troops, conſiſting as was ſaid of about 500 men, deſtroyed the American ſtores at Peek's Kill; they met with but very little oppoſition: here our General loſt a part of his baggage, which was left when he came away for Boſton, in February. Monſieur De Bore, a French General, came to Boſton: he had been engaged by our Miniſters in France, to enter the American ſervice, &c.

27th.—Our General received orders from the Commander in Chief, to make an alteration in the deſtination of the Maſſachuſetts regiments, ſending eight of the regiments to Peek's Kill, and ſeven to Ticonderoga.

31ſt.—Our General took a view of the ſtate of the works at Dorcheſter, &c.

April 3d.—Capt. Sumner, of Greaton's regiment, marched a detachment of the regiment for Peek's Kill.

4th.

4th.—A part of Col. Shepard's regiment marched for Peek's Kill.

7th.—Our General took a view of the barracks at Proſpect Hill, preparatory to the putting of the recruits under inoculation with the ſmall-pox.

9th.—About 120 men of Patterſon's regiment marched for Peek's Kill.

11th.—A part of Nixon's regiment marched for Peek's Kill; on the 12th, 160 men of Bayley's for Ticonderoga; and on the 13th, 200 of Weſſon's for the latter place. The ſame day, began to inoculate the recruits at Proſpect Hill.

15th.—Colonel Jackſon's Independent Company marched to do duty at Providence; and a company of Col. Crane's artillery for the main army.

16th.—Two hundred men of Col. Wiggleſworth's regiment marched for Peek's Kill. The ſame evening, our General received orders from Gen. Waſhington to ſend the troops to Peek's Kill, by the route of Kenderhook. The ſame day, 10 tons of powder arrived at Boſton, from Portſmouth, (N. H.)

A ſecond diviſion of recruits for Bayley's regiment marched for Ticonderoga, as did a diviſion from Col. Bradford's for the ſame place.

20th.—A large letter-of-marque ſhip arrived at Boſton from Nantz in France, with a valuable cargo on private account.

23d.—An expreſs from Portſmouth brought an account of the arrival at that place of the French ſhip Amphitrite, having on board 52 braſs field-pieces, completely mounted, with apparatus; 6,132 muſquets; 120 barrels of powder, and many other articles.

24th.—A ſecond diviſion of Col. Crane's artillery marched for the army.

28th.—A diviſion for Weſſon's regiment marched for Ticonderoga.

29th.

29th.—An expreſs arrived from Gov. Trumbull, giving an account that the enemy had landed a body of men near Fairfield, and that a number of ſhips were ſtanding up Hudſon's River. This body of the enemy conſiſted of about 2,000; they landed on the 25th at Fairfield, and puſhed for Danbury, where the Americans had magazines of ſtores, which the Britiſh burnt and deſtroyed. Generals Wooſter and Arnold were in that part of Connecticut; they aſſembled the militia of the vicinity, and attacked the Britiſh on their return; and there were ſeveral very ſharp ſkirmiſhes, at and near Ridgfield, in one of which the brave Gen. Wooſter fell; and Gen. Arnold having his horſe ſhot down under him, by a ſoldier who was very near him, and who was following up his ſhot with his bayonet charged, Arnold catched one of his piſtols from the holſters on the ſlain horſe, and inſtantly ſhot the ſoldier dead on the ſpot. The loſs was conſiderable on both ſides, in killed and wounded: the Britiſh ſay theirs did not exceed 172, killed, wounded and miſſing. The loſs to the Americans, in ſtores, &c. was conſiderable, and could but ill be ſpared at that time.

May 5th.—Col. Jackſon's Independent Company returned from doing duty at Providence.

14th.—Gen. Du Condray, an experienced French artillery officer, engaged by our Commiſſioners in France, to act at the head of the American artillery, arrived at Boſton: on viewing, from Beacon Hill, the ſituation of Boſton, and the American works around the town, he made a laugh at the Britiſh leaving the town when under no greater danger; adding, that the force which they had, might have defended the place againſt an army of 50,000 men. A valuable prize, loaded with dry goods, was ſent into Newbury-Port.

21ſt.

21ſt.—The continental frigates, and a fleet of private ſhips of war, ſailed on a cruize, with a fair wind.

28th.—Intelligence was received, that a detachment of Americans, under the command of Colonel Meigs, of Connecticut, had paſſed the Sound on the 23d to Long-Iſland, and croſſed to Sagg Harbour, where they deſtroyed and burnt a number of veſſels at the wharf, and every thing on ſhore, and brought off 80 or 90 priſoners. This enterpriſe was conducted with much addreſs and great expedition.

29th.—A prize brig was ſent in, laden with ſalt, cordage, &c. She was from Topſham in England. No reinforcement for the army in America had ſailed the laſt of March.

June 8th.—Two prizes were ſent in; one laden with coals, the other with dry goods.

9th.—A 50 gun ſhip of the enemy, and two frigates were cruizing in our bay.

14th.—A prize taken by Commodore Manly, laden with duck, cordage, &c. and two brigs from Bilboa, arrived ſafe.

July 1ſt.—Intelligence was received, that General Howe evacuated Brunſwick on the 18th of the preceding month; he had before advanced as far as Somerſet court-houſe, and had thrown up a number of works, which he abandoned: the American light troops haraſſed his rear. This day, four of the enemy's cruizers came ſo near in, as to be diſcovered from Nantaſket.

4th.—The anniverſary of the Independence of the United States was celebrated with proper demonſtrations of joy.

6th.—An expreſs arrived from Peek's Kill, with intelligence from Gen. Waſhington, intimating that on the morning of the 1ſt inſt. the enemy's fleet which lay at Amboy ſailed down round that town; and

and that the troops who lay encamped oppoſite to the town, ſtruck their tents and marched off. The enemy were alſo advancing on the Lake with their fleet towards Ticonderoga. A detachment of ſoldiers for Col. M. Jackſon's regiment marched for the northern army.

7th.—Capt. Cluſton arrived from France, with powder, arms, &c. for the State; he had alſo made a ſucceſsful cruize.

11th.—Intelligence was received, that the Americans evacuated Ticonderoga on the 6th, at night; a great many ſtores, &c. were loſt. The Britiſh no ſooner arrived before Ticonderoga, than they were diſcovered on Mount Hope: this ſteep and rugged hill was thought to be inacceſſible by the Americans, at leaſt with artillery; and therefore, notwithſtanding its nearneſs to the works, and overlooking of them in part, it was not taken poſſeſſion of; but they ſhould have recollected what had been ſaid by the late King of Pruſſia, as to ſuch poſitions—that "where a goat can go, a man may go; and where a man can go, artillery may be drawn up." The Britiſh were no ſooner ſeen on this hill, where the *wily Phillips* of the artillery is ſaid to have aſcended, than they ſaw an additional reaſon for quitting the poſt. This was a ſore and heavy loſs to the Americans; but in the iſſue proved a more certain and earlier overthrow of all Burgoyne's army: yet ſo exaſperated were the people at that time, that had the commanding General, St. Clair, been immediately brought to trial, he would have ſtood but a poor chance: he was afterwards tried and acquitted with honour. The Britiſh took poſſeſſion of the works, and puſhed on rapidly after the Americans, taking and deſtroying every thing that fell in their way. Brig. Gen. Frazer, with the light troops, purſued with

with great ardour, and on the 7th came up with a body of the Americans, commanded by the brave Col. Francis, of Maſſachuſetts. A warm action enſued; the Americans were worſted; the Colonel was ſlain, and many other officers and ſoldiers killed, wounded and taken priſoners. This flew through the country like a ſhock of electricity, and rouſed the people to noble exertions. Gen. St. Clair joined Gen. Schuyler, at Fort Edward, after a fatiguing retreat. On the 10th, a moſt conſpicuous piece of gallantry was exhibited at Rhode-Iſland. Maj. Gen. Preſcott having the command of the Britiſh troops at that place, Col. Barton of Providence formed a reſolution to ſurpriſe and take him: he accordingly proceeded to the iſland with a party of choſen men in two boats with muffled oars, taking with him a negro man whoſe hard head was nearly as efficacious as a beetle, to burſt a door; and on this night with great addreſs evading the Britiſh water-guards, paſſed down the weſt ſide of the iſland, and landed near a hollow ground, and inſtantly puſhed for the houſe of a Mr. *Overing*, where the General quartered. The centinel at the door was ſeized, the houſe entered, and demand made whether the General was there; and finding that he was, and the apartment, the door was burſt open, and the General and his Aid-de-camp ſeized, and told that they muſt go off inſtantly. The General aſked if he might put on his clothes? The Colonel anſwered, "*very few, and very quick, Sir.*" The Colonel returned to his boats, and repaſſed the water-guards, which the General had much confidence would have releaſed him; for on paſſing the laſt, he obſerved to the Colonel, "Sir, I did not think it poſſible you could eſcape the vigilance of the water-guards." This was a brilliant affair; and Congreſs duly rewarded Col. Barton for his diſtinguiſhed addreſs and gallantry.

13th.—An expreſs arrived from Gen. Waſhington, with information that the Britiſh were preparing their tranſports for the embarkation of their troops from Staten-Iſland, were fixing births for the light-horſe, &c. but their deſtination could not be developed. They had puſhed into the Jerſies, as if deſigning to march to Philadelphia, and then turned back, as has been mentioned, from Amboy, and now were preparing to embark; and we ſhall anon ſee more of their manœuvres and deceptions.

16th.—A number of Americans, who had left the northern army when it retreated, as is generally the caſe on ſimilar occaſions, came to Boſton; they were immediately taken up and confined, to be ſent back again: the beſt method in like caſes.

19th.—At evening an expreſs paſſed through Boſton, on his way to Philadelphia, with diſpatches which had been brought to Portſmouth, (N. H.) by a veſſel in 42 days paſſage from France. It was ſaid that there was great probability of an immediate war between France and England.

21ſt.—By intelligence from Peek's Kill it was learnt, that on the preceding Wedneſday 10 pieces of cannon were ſhipped for Albany; that a diviſion of the American army was oppoſite to Fiſhkill; and that General Waſhington was moving towards King's Ferry with the main army, ſaid to be 20,000 ſtrong, with near 800 waggons, and having a number of flat-bottomed boats on carriages, &c.

26th.—Count Polaſki, a Poliſh nobleman, came to Boſton, and dined at head-quarters.

Auguſt 1ſt.—Information was ſent from Cape Ann, that a fleet of veſſels, ſaid to be near 100, had been ſeen from the high lands, ſtanding to the northward. This cauſed ſome alarm: the guards at the magazines, &c. were doubled.

4th.

4th.—Intelligence was received that Gen. Waſhington was moving with the main army towards Philadelphia, and had detached Gen. Glover with his brigade to join the northern army. An account was received that there had been a ſkirmiſh on Wood Creek, between a party of the Americans and the enemy, to the advantage of the former.

6th.—Intelligence was received that the American northern army had fallen back to Saratoga. About this time, a party of the enemy landed on Boſton Neck (ſo called) in Rhode-Iſland: they were driven off without doing much damage. The ſame day intelligence was received, that on the 23d of the preceding month the Britiſh fleet ſailed from Sandy Hook, and had arrived off the Capes of Delaware.

8th.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh fleet ſailed out of the Capes of Delaware on the 31ſt ult. ſtanding to the eaſtward. This induced Gen. Waſhington to retrograde the main American army towards the North River.

11th.—There was a report that the northern army had fallen back to Stillwater. One ſixth part of the militia in a number of the counties of Maſſachuſetts were ordered to be detached and marched immediately to reinforce the northern army.

14th.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh fleet had returned again to the Capes of Delaware. Col. Johnſon and St. Leger were advancing with a body of the enemy towards Fort Schuyler, on the Mohawk River.

About this time, a Miſs M'Crea, ſaid to be a beautiful young lady, and in all the innocence of youth, her father warmly engaged on the ſide of the Britiſh, and ſhe on the very point of marriage with a Britiſh officer, on ſome diſpute between two Indians, as to which of them ſhe of right belonged as a captive,

tive, ſhe was moſt inhumanly maſſacred! The act was probably as abhorrent to the Britiſh as to the Americans; but they ought not to have engaged the ſavages in their cauſe, as they might well have known their ungovernable temper, and diſpoſition for blood; for this was not the only inſtance. A Britiſh officer ſending his waiter to a ſpring for ſome cool water, in a few minutes an Indian came in, with the ſcalp of the waiter ſmoaking in his hand.

St. Leger having gone up the Mohawk to reduce Fort Schuyler, Gen. Burgoyne determined to ſend out another ſtrong detachment on his left, towards Bennington. The command of this detachment was given to Lieut. Col. Baum, a Heſſian; and Col. Breyman, with another detachment, was ordered to cover and ſupport Baum. Theſe were met by the brave Gen. Stark, who gave them a complete overthrow. On the morning of the 16th, 32 officers and near 700 men were taken priſoners, with 4 light field-pieces, nearly 1,000 arms, a quantity of baggage, &c. The Americans were ſaid to have had about 25 men killed: the loſs of the enemy in killed was judged to be nearly 200. Fort Schuyler was cloſely beſieged by St. Leger; and the brave Col. Harkimer, with the Tryon county militia, was marching to its relief. St. Leger learning his advance, drew off a large part of his beſieging troops, to meet and give him battle, before he got near the fort: the battle was obſtinate, and the militia behaved with great bravery, but were at length defeated; their brave Colonel and many of the militia were ſlain: it was ſaid that the action laſted 5 or 6 hours. Matters now appearing more ſerious in this quarter, Gen. Arnold marched with a ſufficient detachment to raiſe the ſiege. As ſoon as St. Leger learnt his approach, he ſent off ſome Indians, as if friends, to

meet

meet Arnold, and inform him that St. Leger had received a ſtrong reinforcement, and adviſed Arnold to halt and wait for a reinforcement himſelf—then abandoned the ſiege with precipitation, leaving his tents ſtanding, his baggage, artillery, &c. behind him. Thus were both Burgoyne's wings effectually clipped.

September 1ſt.—Intelligence was received, that after much manœuvring, Howe's fleet came to anchor in Cheſapeak Bay, on the 21ſt ult. conſiſting of near 200 ſail, and it was expected he would ſoon land his troops. The 24th, Gen. Waſhington's army was on full march to meet Howe, and then within 5 miles of Philadelphia. A valuable cargo arrived ſafe from Spain; among other articles, a large number of ſhoes, hoſe, blankets, ſhirts, cordage, duck, &c.

2d.—Intelligence was received, that Gen. Howe's army had landed at the Head of Elk. A detachment from Gen. Sullivan's diviſion a little before this time made an excurſion on to Staten-Iſland, and brought off ſeveral hundred priſoners, and a large quantity of baggage. The American loſs was ſaid to be about 60, including officers.

5th.—Four hundred and one priſoners, taken near Bennington by Gen. Stark, were eſcorted to Boſton; they conſiſted of Britiſh, Brunſwick and Canadian troops.

9th.—Capt. Harden arrived at Boſton in a Connecticut State ſhip of 20 guns: he brought in with him a Jamaica packet, which he took during his cruize. It was ſaid the packet had a large ſum in ſpecie on board; and a Mr. Shirley and family, on their paſſage to England. The laſt accounts ſtated both Gen. Waſhington's and the northern army to be near the enemy; and important news might be momently expected.

19th.

19th.—Col. Lee's regiment moved into Boſton.

20th.—The diſagreeable news was received, that on the 11th inſt. a ſevere action took place between Gen. Waſhington's and Howe's armies, near the Brandywine, which ended rather in favour of the latter, who remained maſters of the field. The Britiſh here, as in ſeveral other inſtances, had recourſe to ſtratagem: they held out the appearance of an intention of forcing their way at Chad's Ford, which Gen. Kniphauſen menaced with a heavy column of Heſſians; while the Britiſh column, by a long circuitous march, reached the forks of the river, and there ſecured a ſafe paſſage. Gen. Waſhington was pretty early apprized of this movement, and immediately took meaſures for ſtrengthening his right, by ordering ſome troops from his left. After the action had become pretty warm on the right, and the Britiſh had got the advantage, Kniphauſen paſſed Chad's Ford; and although the troops who were ſtill on the left behaved well, they were by no means ſufficient to reſiſt the heavy column of Heſſians. It is ſaid, that after the Heſſian Grenadiers had croſſed the Ford, they halted at the foot of the hill, below the Americans, under a warm fire, and with great deliberation changed their hats for their heavy braſs caps, which were carried by a loop on a button at the hip, and then aſcended the hill, from which the Americans were obliged to retire. Here the brave Capt. Bryant, of the artillery, who had before ſeveral times diſtinguiſhed himſelf under the eye of our General, received a muſquet-ball in the bottom of his belly; a brother officer carried him off the field, but he died of the wound. Gen. Waſhington, ſeconded by his officers, did every thing in their power to check the Britiſh; and a part of the American army took a poſition which probably ſaved the army from

from a total defeat. Perhaps the American army were, more or leſs, more generally engaged in this action, than in any other during the war. The American loſs was conſiderable in killed and wounded, and a number of pieces of braſs field-artillery were loſt. The Britiſh alſo ſuffered pretty ſeverely in killed and wounded.

The next night, Gen. Gray made, with much ſecrecy, an attack on a body of Americans, under the command of Gen. Wayne: the bayonet was chiefly made uſe of, and it proved but too efficacious againſt the Americans, who ſuffered conſiderable loſs, in killed and wounded. Gen. Waſhington retreated firſt to Philadelphia, and then left the city. The Britiſh army a few days afterwards advanced to Germantown, and on the 27th a detachment of their army took poſſeſſion of Philadelphia.

23d.—Gen. Waſhington's orders for ſending forward Colonels Lee's, Henley's and Jackſon's regiments, were received by our General.

24th.—Several prizes were ſent in by a privateer brig belonging to Col. Sears.

25th.—Intelligence was received, that on Friday, the 19th inſtant, there was a warm and bloody action between Gen. Gates's and Burgoyne's advanced troops, which laſted until dark. The troops behaved with the greateſt bravery on both ſides. Col. Morgan's light corps, and eleven other American regiments were more or leſs engaged. Of the Americans, 2 Lieutenant-Colonels, Coburn and Adams, 3 Captains, 3 Subalterns, and 56 non-commiſſioned officers and privates were killed, and 248 wounded. The loſs of the enemy was very conſiderable, and much greater than that of the Americans. On the 18th, the day preceding the foregoing battle, Col. Brown made an excurſion in the enemy's rear to Lake George;

George; made 293 of the enemy prisoners; retook 100 Americans: he also took near 100 batteaux, several large gun-boats, an armed sloop, &c.—took possession of the French Lines (so called) at Ticonderoga, and summoned Fort Independence to surrender.

27th.—Col. Craft's regiment of State artillery marched out of Boston, with 4 light field-pieces and an eight-inch howitzer, towards Providence, on a secret expedition, as it was called.

29th.—Intelligence was received, that several valuable prizes had been sent into Dartmouth.

October 2d.—Intelligence was received, that on the 16th, Gen. Du Condray was drowned in the Schuylkill; he rode into the ferry-boat at one end, but was not able to command his horse, who went out at the other end of the boat, plunging into the river. This officer, as before mentioned, was engaged to come to America, to take the command of the artillery; but whatever may have been his talents, the artillery was so well commanded, that the placing a foreign officer over them, in such a manner, and whose rank would also have soared above many other officers in the line, would most certainly have produced a convulsion in the army, had it been persisted in. This circumstance prevented the danger. The same day, Col. Lee's regiment marched for the main army.

6th.—Col. H. Jackson's regiment encamped on Boston common, and the next day, about noon, marched out of town for the army; the regiment, although small, made a good appearance. About the same time that the regiment marched out of town, upwards of 100 British and Canadian prisoners, taken near Lake George, by Col. Brown, marched in.

8th.—It was learnt that a body of the enemy, said to be about 3,000, were moving from New-York towards

towards Peek's Kill. Gen. Washington, after he left Philadelphia, encamped near a place called Skippack Creek, about 16 miles from Germantown.

13th.—At 3 o'clock, A. M. an express arrived from Gen. Gates's army, with an account that on Tuesday, the 7th inst. a smart action took place between the right of Gen. Burgoyne's army, and the American left, when the enemy were repulsed, drove back to their works, and then forced from them. Three Field-Officers, 6 Captains, 10 Subalterns, 1 Quarter-Master-General, and 190 privates were taken prisoners, besides 300 taken in the hospital—8 pieces of brass cannon, 2 twelve and 6 six pounders, 3 ammunition-waggons, 300 tents, 200 barrels of flour, and a large quantity of baggage were trophies of victory. One hundred of the enemy lay dead on the ground. The American loss, although not exactly known, was said not to be more than 30 killed and 100 wounded; among the latter, Generals Arnold and Lincoln, both in the leg, the former but slightly; it was problematical whether the latter was wounded by a British or American soldier. Gen. Frazer, an enterprising officer of the British, was mortally wounded, and died of his wounds.

15th.—Intelligence was received, that a body of the British from New-York, in about 30 transports, had proceeded up the Hudson; they had made several landings below and at Peek's Kill: on Monday the 6th inst. they crossed over, and landed on the west side of the river, and marched along the hills towards Fort Montgomery and its dependencies: this fort was tolerably situated on the bank of the Hudson, to annoy shipping going up the river; and the works were pretty good on that side, but were not so, nor fully completed on the back side; and the right flank was commanded by higher ground

on the ſouth, and near the fort, on the other ſide of Pooplop's Creek, the mouth of which was near to the ſouth ſide of the fort; on this higher ground, and near to the ſmall deep pond, a ſtrong redoubt, called Clinton, was erected; it was equally eſſential that this redoubt ſhould be taken, as a reduction of the fort: the Britiſh therefore moved againſt this redoubt, while another column, by a more circuitous movement, fell in the rear of Fort Montgomery; they were met in the defiles, where the ſkirmiſhes were ſharp; but they continued to advance to the redoubt, which was nobly defended, and before which they ſuſtained very conſiderable loſs, (a number of their ſlain were afterwards drawn out of the pond, where they had been thrown for concealment) but ſoon carried it, and afterwards Fort Montgomery. The garriſon principally made their eſcape in the duſk of the evening; among them were Gov. Clinton, and his brother, who was a Brigadier-General alſo: they made their eſcape in a very hazardous manner, and the latter was wounded. After the reduction of Fort Montgomery, the Americans evacuated Fort Conſtitution, and the block-houſe on Conſtitution Iſland, oppoſite to Weſt Point (the latter was not yet fortified;) and the two new frigates, *Congreſs* and *Montgomery*, which lay in the river, were ſet on fire by the Americans and burnt. The enemy afterwards proceeded up the river, and burnt Eſopus; their object was if poſſible to form a junction with Burgoyne, or open a water communication to Albany; and ſpies paſſed between them.

16th.—Two or three of the enemy's cruizers appeared in the bay, but a few leagues from the Light. While the Britiſh army lay encamped at Germantown, Gen. Waſhington reſolved to attack them. This was a brave deſign; and the ſucceſs of the firſt onſet, at about 3 o'clock, A. M. of the 4th inſt. af-

ter

ter the Americans had marched all the night, was equal to the deſign; for the Britiſh, where the attack was firſt made, were almoſt inſtantly puſhed from their ground, and were falling back panic ſtruck on their other troops. When Lieut. Col. Muſgrove had the preſence of mind to throw ſeveral companies into a ſtrong ſtone houſe. Houſes at all times, and eſpecially thoſe of ſtone and brick, under a judicious conduct, admit of a good defence; and at this time probably proved the means of the Americans' loſing an advantage, which no one can tell how far it might have been puſhed. When an enemy is routed, and panic ſtruck are flying before the aſſailants, the beſt, if not the only way, is to follow them, if the ground will admit of it, cloſe at their heels, taking care not to fall into ambuſcades. Thus the panic of fear continues to multiply; but if the purſuers ſtop, and eſpecially if thoſe who were flying hear a firing behind them, but not upon them, they conclude that their own troops in turn have gotten an advantage, or at leaſt are holding their purſuers at bay. This immediately recovers them from their panic; they will next return to the charge, and will be more likely to make an obſtinate reſiſtance than before they were at firſt routed; while their return to the charge will greatly damp thoſe who before conſidered themſelves almoſt in the graſp of victory. Hence what took place at Germantown was no wonder. The fogginеſs of the morning was unfortunate for the Americans; but the Britiſh taking poſſeſſion of the ſtone houſe, and defending it, was the moſt unfortunate circumſtance. The loſs on both ſides was conſiderable; on the ſide of the Americans, Brig. Gen. Naſh, and on the ſide of the Britiſh, Brig. Gen. Agnew, were among the ſlain: but although this attempt

was

was not crowned with victory, it caused the British to have a more reverential opinion of Gen. Washington, whom they now found dare to attack their whole army, even in a chosen position of their own. Perhaps it was best that the action closed as it did; had the Americans made their way far into the long street of that town, probably many other houses would have been occupied in the same way. The burying-yard, with a strong wall, was lined with troops by the enemy; and the position in which their army lay, was calculated for their wings closing in to much advantage; at any rate, the battle must have been very bloody, and situation and circumstances were in favour of the British. After the British were in possession of Philadelphia, they had much to do in order to get possession of the Delaware, and remove the obstructions which had been formed in it. There were also several works to be reduced; among others, a fort on Mud-Island, and a pretty strong work at Red Bank.

22d.—Highly important and most interesting intelligence was received, that on the 17th inst. Gen. Burgoyne and his whole army surrendered, under Convention. They were to be marched to the neighbourhood of Boston, and from thence sent to England. Upon the receipt of this news, the cannon on Fort Hill were discharged, and joy was seated on every brow.

23d.—At 1 o'clock, P. M. the cannon on Fort Hill, and on the heights of Dorchester were discharged, and also on board the ships in the harbour. In the evening, our General's quarters (the house of the late Hon. Mr. Russel) was beautifully illuminated. The following is the number of troops which surrendered to Maj. Gen. Gates, and the state of Gen. Burgoyne's army after he left Canada:

(Under

(Under the Convention.)

Britiſh,	2,442
Foreign,	2,198
Canadians, &c. ſent back to Canada,	1,100
Staff,	12
	5,752
Priſoners taken at different times,	400
Sick and wounded,	528
Deſerters,	300
Loſt at Bennington,	1,220
Killed ſince the 17th of September,	600
Killed and taken at Ticonderoga,	413
Total,	9,213

The braſs ordnance taken were as follows; 2 24-pounders; 4 12-pounders; 18 6-pounders; 4 3-pounders; 2 8-inch mortars; 5 howitzers; total, 35, excluſive of thoſe taken at Bennington.

Thus were the Britiſh totally diſappointed in this quarter. The troops intended to form a junction on the Hudſon were as high up as Poughkeepſie; and Gen. Burgoyne informed our General after he arrived at Boſton, that on the evening after he had propoſed to Gen. Gates to ſurrender, in caſe he could obtain honourable terms, which were to be ſettled the next day, a ſpy came in to him from the troops down the river, ſtating how far they had got up, and what ſteps were next to be taken; on which he (Gen. Burgoyne) aſſembled his officers more generally than uſual in councils, and ſtated to them the circumſtances and ſituation of both armies, and whether, conſiſtently with fair principles of honour, they could break off the negociation for an honourable Convention, or not; when it was the unanimous opinion of every officer preſent that they could not.

But

But in a ſituation like his, at that moment, danger at hand is more powerful on the mind, than the hope of relief at a diſtance. The troops who were up the river returned down.

The capture of Gen. Burgoyne and his whole army, who were now on their way to Boſton, opened a new, important, and delicate field for our General. This army, in which there were many officers of military erudition, and ſome of refined and courtly manners, who had a high opinion of national honour and proweſs, and who, in conſequence of the Convention which they had formed, had their ſpirits by no means depreſſed, as thoſe who are compelled to ſurrender at diſcretion,—were ſure to lay a heavy taſk on his ſhoulders. As ſoon as he was notified that theſe troops were coming under his direction, he ſet himſelf in earneſt to prepare for their reception. The barracks at Proſpect and Winter Hills were directed to be put inſtantly in order. The Council was applied to, to aid in the procurement of quarters from the citizens for the officers; nor was this an eaſy taſk. The families of the citizens generally wanting the room in their reſpective houſes, rendered it difficult to obtain ſo many quarters as were neceſſary for ſo great a number, and extended the limits of the parole very conſiderably. The Council were diſpoſed to do every thing in their power, and gave orders accordingly whenever they were neceſſary. A heavy duty was alſo falling on the Quarter-Maſter's department, as it reſpected quarters, and alſo fuel, the latter of which, had been rendered ſcarce in the vicinity, by the American army having been here in 1775; and the enemy's cruizers prevented its being brought from the eaſtern country. But the exertions of Col. Chaſe, who was Deputy-Quarter-Maſter-General, and the aſſiſtants

and

and conductors in his department, and of Col. Davis, who was Deputy-Barrack-Maſter, and who, in the procurement of fuel, was indefatigable, a comfortable ſupply was obtained. Before the arrival of the troops at Cambridge, our General had digeſted and drafted a parole, and ſeveral articles for the government of the troops in quarters; theſe he had drawn in as an article in the parole; and the honour of the officers in this way, was pledged for their obſervance of the articles, which rendered the government of them much eaſier; being thus bound to govern themſelves with propriety, or infringe their paroles; knowing that many things in minutiæ, would be to ſettle, which would be tedious in an epiſtolary way. As ſoon as General Burgoyne had arrived at Cambridge, our General ſent over one of his Aid-de-camps to invite Gen. Burgoyne to dine with him the next day, bringing with him his two Major-Generals, Phillips and Reideſel. An elegant dinner was prepared, and many other gentlemen invited, among whom were Generals Glover of Maſſachuſetts, and Whipple of New-Hampſhire, who were at the capture, and had commanded the eſcort, &c. from Saratoga to Cambridge.

November 8th.—Our General ſent one of his Aids to accompany Gen. Burgoyne and the other officers into Boſton, by the way of Roxbury; they arrived ſome time before dinner, as was intended, that buſineſs might be conſidered. The parole was ſhewn to them, and the articles for their government in quarters, with which they were well pleaſed. But here a diſcovery was firſt made of ſomething which they wiſhed to retain, while in our country, and which our General would never for a moment allow. Gen. Phillips turning to our General, obſerved, "Sir, you well know the diſpoſition of ſoldiers, and that they will

will more or leſs in all armies commit ſome diſorders; ſuppoſe you ſhould delegate to Gen. Burgoyne the power of ſeeing *your* orders executed." Our General replied, that he knew the diſpoſition of ſoldiers, and alſo the neceſſity of order and diſcipline; that he was not only willing, but expected that Gen. Burgoyne, and every other officer, would exert themſelves to keep order; that for this purpoſe among themſelves, and for internal order and obedience, he might command and puniſh as might appear to be neceſſary; but in no caſe to attempt capital puniſhment. But as to the exerciſe of his own command, and enforcement of his own orders when neceſſary, was a juriſdiction which Gen. Burgoyne muſt not expect to exerciſe while here. Gen. Burgoyne ſmiled, and Gen. Phillips turned it off by ſaying, "I only meant it for your eaſement, Sir."

Before dinner was done, ſo great was the curioſity of the citizens of both ſexes, and of all ages and deſcriptions, to get a peep at Gen. Burgoyne, that the ſtreets were filled, the doors, windows, the tops of the houſes and fences crowded. Gen. Burgoyne had aſked our General if he would indulge him to go out of town by the way of Charleſtown, which was inſtantly granted. When he was ready to depart, our General told him that he ſhould accompany him to the ferry; and a proceſſion was formed, the American gentlemen mixing with the Britiſh. The ſtreets were ſo crowded, that it was difficult getting along; but not a word or a geſture that was diſreſpectful. When arrived oppoſite to the Province-Houſe, Gen. Burgoyne turned round to the other Generals, and obſerved, "There is the former reſidence of the Governor;" when ſome perſon on the ſide of the ſtreet, and in a tone fully to be heard, added, "*and on the other ſide is the riding-ſchool;*" alluding

alluding to the Old South Meeting-Houſe, having been put to that uſe in 1775: but the General, who muſt have heard it, made no reply, but ſoon after obſerved, "Sir, I am aſtoniſhed at the civility of your people; for were you walking the ſtreets of London in my ſituation, you would not eſcape inſult." When arrived at the ferry-ways, the crowd were down to the water's edge; but when the boat put off, there was not the leaſt indecency, or wry countenance diſcovered.——O my dear countrymen! how did this your dignified conduct at that moment charm my very ſoul! Such conduct flows from a *greatneſs of mind*, that goes to conquer a world.

Col. Keith was appointed Deputy-Adjutant-General, and Maj. Swaſey Town-Major.

14th.—The Council were ſtill deliberating on the ſubject of quarters, and determined to do every thing in their power; but ſome individuals were refractory.

19th.—Gen. Hancock arrived in town, and was ſaluted by the diſcharge of the cannon of the Fort, Park, &c.

22d.—Intelligence was received of the repulſe of the enemy, before the redoubt at Red Bank, on the 22d ult. This redoubt or fort had a garriſon by no means ſufficient properly to man the whole work. The commanding officer had therefore wiſely leſſened it, by running a parapet with a ditch acroſs the area of the fort, but had left the work entire in its largeſt extent. A body of choſen troops were ſent to reduce this work, under the command of the Heſſian Col. Donop, a brave and good officer. In order if poſſible to get ſome idea of the work, he ſent his ſummons for the fort to ſurrender by a very capable Adjutant; but the Commandant of the fort took care to have him ſtopped without the work, and

where he had no opportunity to see more than the ditch and parapet on that side. The commanding officer refusing to surrender, an assault was made; the assailants at the head of the column bringing in their hands a sufficient number of short fascines to fill the ditch where they meant to pass, which was well done, and the parapet was mounted; but to their disappointment and surprise, they now found there was another ditch and parapet to pass, and in the face of a dreadful fire too, which made great slaughter; a number of them, however, advanced into the second ditch, and began to remove the frizes on the berme; but these were generally killed in the ditch, and such as were not killed or wounded obliged to quit the outer work. Their loss in killed and wounded was great; among the latter, Col. Donop mortally; he was taken after the action near the fort, and brought in. An Ensign had made his way over the second ditch, had got on to the frizes, and lay close against the base of the parapet until the action was over, and then got up and surrendered, observing that he thought his position the only safe one; for had he attempted to put his head above the parapet, he knew his brains would have been instantly blown out; or if he had attempted to re-cross the ditch, he should have been shot in the back. Besides this severe check, the British met with considerable opposition and loss at other places, before they got full and peaceable possession of the river; particularly at Mud Island. They lost the Augusta man-of-war, and suffered other naval damage.

Gen. Washington being now considerably reinforced with a part of the northern conquering army, advanced to White Marsh, about 14 miles from Philadelphia, where he encamped, in a strong and well chosen position. Gen. Howe, apprehensive that this movement

movement indicated a deſign upon Philadelphia, determined to move out, and either invite Gen. Waſhington to a general action, or, if he found him vulnerable, to attack him in his own poſition. Accordingly, on the evening of the 4th of December, he marched with the Britiſh army, and on the next morning took poſt on Cheſnut Hill, in front of the American right. Gen. Waſhington, knowing the goodneſs of his poſition, wiſely continued in it; nor dare Gen. Howe attack him. The latter then changed his ground to a new poſition, oppoſite to the American left and centre; but neither dare he attack either of theſe. Several ſkirmiſhes took place, as is uſual in ſuch caſes; in one of which Brig. Gen. Irwin on the American ſide was wounded. After ſeveral days ſpent in this way, Howe was obliged to return, without effecting any thing, to the no ſmall injury of his army, who had ſuffered much from the inclemency of the ſeaſon. Indeed nothing is more deſtructive to an army than winter campaigns. After this, Gen. Waſhington moved the American army to Valley Forge, on the Schuylkill, about 16 miles from Philadelphia, where he took a poſition as wiſely choſen as the other, and where the army erected huts for the winter.

We now return to take up our chain of events.

23d.—A French ſhip, with dry goods from France, by the way of St. Peters, arrived at Boſton.

Gen. Burgoyne had not yet ſigned the parole; he pretended to delay until their quarters were fully furniſhed, although he had every aſſurance that it ſhould be done as faſt as circumſtances would poſſibly admit. On this day, therefore, our Gen. wrote him the following letter.

HEAD-

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *Nov.* 23, 1777.

"SIR,

"TWO weeks have now elapſed ſince I had fully expected that the officers would have ſigned their paroles. They have, during this time, been enjoying in a great meaſure the liberty of the limits intended to be aſſigned to them, without pledging their honour by parole; which is not only contrary to the eſtabliſhed cuſtom of nations, but contrary to the eleventh article of the Convention. Whatever objections might at firſt be made to giving the parole, muſt now be done away, by the fulleſt evidence that proper quarters ſhall be provided, and which in a very conſiderable degree is already done. I muſt, therefore, in the moſt explicit terms, inſiſt that the officers who wiſh and expect to be permitted on parole, agreeably to the Convention, do ſign it tomorrow. This is ſo reaſonable, that I expect there will be no further heſitancy; and I ſtill aſſure your Excellency, that no endeavours of mine ſhall be wanting to fulfil the Convention, and to treat the officers with politeneſs and generoſity.

I am, &c.

(Signed) WILLIAM HEATH.

To Lieut. Gen. BURGOYNE."

25th.—Gen. Burgoyne and the other officers of the Convention ſigned their parole.

Congreſs before this, viz. on the 8th inſtant, paſſed the following reſolve:

In Congreſs, Nov. 8, 1777.

"*Reſolved*, That Maj. Gen. Heath be directed forthwith to cauſe to be taken down the name and rank of every commiſſioned officer, and the name, former place of abode and occupation, ſize, age, and deſcription of every non-commiſſioned officer and private

private ſoldier, and all other perſons comprehended in the Convention made between Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne and Maj. Gen. Gates, on the 16th day of October, 1777, and tranſmit an authentic copy thereof to the Board of War, in order that if any officer or ſoldier, or other perſon as above mentioned, of the ſaid army, ſhall hereafter be found in arms againſt theſe States in North-America, during the preſent conteſt, he may be convicted of the offence, and ſuffer the puniſhment in ſuch caſe inflicted by the law of nations.

"That Maj. Gen. Heath be directed to take the parole in writing of the officers, according to the Convention, and tranſmit authenticated copies of ſuch paroles to the Board of War."

Extract from the Minutes,
(Signed) CHARLES THOMSON, *Sec'y.*

Upon the foregoing being communicated to Gen. Burgoyne, and he called upon to have the ſaid deſcriptive liſts made out accordingly, he wrote our General the following letter:

CAMBRIDGE, *Nov.* 20, 1777.

"SIR,

"I RECEIVED a paper, dated Head-Quarters, Boſton, Nov. 20th, purporting to be founded upon expreſs orders from the Honorable Continental Congreſs, which paper I return as inadmiſſible, becauſe extending to matters in which the Congreſs have no right of interference.

"A liſt of the names and rank of every commiſſioned officer, and the numbers of the non-commiſſioned officers and ſoldiers, may be neceſſary to you, Sir, for the purpoſe of fulfilling the Convention, in quartering officers, and the regular delivery of proviſions, fuel, &c. Such liſts ſhall be prepared at your requeſt; but before any other liſts can be granted,

I muſt

I muſt be aſſured of the purpoſes for which they are intended, and the word *order* muſt neither be mentioned nor implied.

I have the honour to be, &c.

(Signed) J. BURGOYNE, Lieut. Gen.

To Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To the foregoing, our General wrote an anſwer as follows:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *Nov.* 21, 1777.

"SIR,

"YOUR's of yeſterday is before me; and although you might at firſt imagine that the Hon. Continental Congreſs have no right of interference in matters of the Convention, yet I conclude upon further reflection you muſt be convinced, that as that body are the Repreſentatives of that people who are to reap the advantages or diſadvantages of the Convention, and as all continental officers are acting by virtue of their authority, and under their direction, they aſſuredly have a right of interference, and to give ſuch orders to their officers as they may think proper, for the full completion of the Convention, and for the ſafety and good of the people.

"The paragraph of my orders of the 20th inſt. reſpecting the troops of the Convention is founded in reaſon and juſtice, being deſigned only to aſcertain the officers and ſoldiers who were comprehended in the Convention, that in caſe any of them (contrary to their faith and honour) ſhould hereafter be found in arms againſt theſe States, in North-America, during the preſent conteſt, they may be convicted of the offence, and ſuffer the puniſhment in ſuch caſe inflicted by the law of nations. I muſt therefore inſiſt that you furniſh me with proper liſts of names, and deſcriptions, for the purpoſe before mentioned as ſoon as may be.

"The

"The other lists of the names and rank of the commissioned officers, and number of non-commissioned officers and soldiers, so essentially necessary for the several purposes of regularity with Quarter-Masters and Commissaries (and which should be frequently renewed, as circumstances may vary) should long ere this have been exhibited. Some days since, I directed my Deputy-Adjutant-General to call for them; and I expect they will be sent in without delay, for the purposes above mentioned.

"I shall at all times endeavour to found my orders on the principles of honour, reason and justice, and not to infringe those delicate principles in others; but my orders for the purposes of order and regularity, must be obeyed by every man and all bodies of men placed under my direction; and fully determined I am, that offenders shall not pass with impunity.

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH, Maj. Gen.

Lieut. Gen. BURGOYNE."

23d.—Gen. Burgoyne wrote an answer to the foregoing. But he now acknowledged a further extent of the supreme power, than in his former letter; but still at least obliquely denied the right of their interference with the Convention troops, who were under express stipulations until they quitted the country, and that no new conditions could be imposed upon them; and asserting that no such requisitions were laid upon the American prisoners in Canada; and concluding, that if it could be found that such had been required by the British in any case, he would submit to it. About this time, an officer, who had been a prisoner in Canada, returned to Boston on parole, and gave information that he and others had complied with similar injunctions before

before they came away; upon this being communicated to Gen. Burgoyne, he found that he had got to the end of his tether of evaſion; he did not attempt to diſpute more, but obſerved, that he ſuppoſed if it was done any time before the troops departed, it would anſwer the purpoſe. Our General found that nothing could be done by force, for were he to attempt of himſelf to have the liſts taken, every thing might be evaded except the ſize and complexion. He therefore laid the matter before Congreſs, with the copies of what had paſſed. Congreſs took the matter into conſideration, and Preſident Laurens wrote our General an approbation of his conduct, and not to puſh the matter, as Congreſs would take a more extenſive view of the buſineſs; concluding his letter, "I have in concluſion to aſ-"ſure you, Sir, that Congreſs repoſe the utmoſt "confidence in your addreſs and abilities for con-"ducting with propriety this important buſineſs, in "which, on one ſide, the faith and honour of "theſe infant States are to be preſerved, and on the "other, the magnanimity and reſolution of Congreſs "to be exemplified."

December.—Congreſs had received ſome intimations, that an application would be made to them for leave for the troops of the Convention to embark at ſome other place than Boſton; they therefore on the 1ſt of December paſſed a reſolution, that no other place than that ſtipulated in the Convention, viz. *Boſton* ſhould be admitted. A few days after, Gen. Burgoyne applied, as was ſuſpected, but to no purpoſe.

Congreſs alſo paſſed reſolutions that all the aſſiſtance of proviſions and other neceſſaries furniſhed to the troops of the Convention ſhould be paid for in ſpecie, or replaced in quantity and quality.

1778.

1778. *January.*—Gen. Burgoyne had now got himſelf into a very ſerious entanglement; he had not only refuſed, and then delayed to give deſcriptive liſts of the troops of the Convention, but ſome time before, viz. in the month of November, had written a letter to Gen. Gates, complaining that the troops had not been furniſhed with quarters as they had a right to expect, and among other things a paragraph as follows:

"While I ſtate to you, Sir, this very unexpected treatment, I entirely acquit Maj. Gen. Heath and every gentleman of the military department of any inattention to the public faith engaged in the Convention. They do what they can; but while the Supreme Powers of the State are unable or unwilling to enforce their authority, and the inhabitants want the hoſpitality, or indeed the common civilization to aſſiſt us without it, the public faith is broke, and we are the immediate ſufferers."

This was unreaſonable, as it reſpected both the civil power, and the people; for the former did every thing in their power, unleſs they had turned the citizens out of their houſes to have let the Convention officers in, which was not to be expected; nor could it be ſuppoſed that the citizens would turn their families themſelves into the ſtreets. But Congreſs conſidered the conduct of Gen. Burgoyne, and theſe and other of his expreſſions on the occaſion, as calling for ſerious conſideration. They therefore inveſtigated the whole in all its latitudes; and the Preſident of Congreſs wrote our General that as it was a matter of high importance, and required deep deliberation, it would probably occupy ſome days, before the reſolutions would be completed. But that, in caſe the fleet arrived before the papers were ſent to him, to forbid the embarkation.

Gen. Burgoyne had received intimations that a fleet of tranſports were about to come round for the troops, and that the *Juno* frigate was to wear a flag for his particular accommodation. This he mentioned to our General, and wiſhed to know if the frigate might come up into the harbour. Our General had no apprehenſions of any danger from a frigate entering the harbour, but apprehended that ſome people might think that he was not ſufficiently vigilant, in caſe he allowed it. He therefore told Gen. Burgoyne that the frigate could not come up into the harbour, and hinted to him the taking one of the moſt convenient tranſports in the fleet for the purpoſe; and he might do as he pleaſed when he got off. This touched Gen. Burgoyne exceedingly, who wrote a letter to our General, in which was the following paragraph.

"As to your allotment of a "*convenient tranſport*" for my paſſage, if it was from yourſelf, I am to thank you Sir, for a ſort of inſult which the moſt haughty man of office would be aſhamed of, in any other country. However, as I am determined every tranſaction concerning this Convention ſhall be notorious, and beyond the powers of ſubterfuge to explain away, I have directed the frigate together with the tranſports to come round, and it will then be for you, Sir, to prohibit the entry of Boſton harbour, to any ſhips bearing a flag of truce, and declaring they are ſent for the expreſs purpoſe of conveying to Great-Britain any part of the troops of the Convention.

(Signed) J. BURGOYNE.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To which our General wrote the following anſwer:

HEAD-

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *Jan.* 5, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOUR Excellency's favour of yeſterday came duly to hand; and I muſt confeſs I was not a little ſurpriſed at ſome expreſſions in it.

"As by the Convention, tranſports only are ſtipulated to receive the troops, I ſubmit to you, Sir, whether a hint (if you were even ſure that it came from myſelf) that you ſhould take a convenient one, rather than introduce a frigate, which is neither expreſſed or implied in the Convention, merits thoſe epithets which you are pleaſed to beſtow on me.

"I have ever aimed to treat you with politeneſs; and the plighted faith and honour of my country require me to pay ſtrict attention to the Convention on their part: of courſe, when tranſports arrive to receive the troops, they will enter the harbour; and if you can find by the Convention that a frigate is to enter for the particular reception of yourſelf, ſhe will not be prohibited. But if it is rather uncommon for ſhips of war, to bear flags of truce, and if conſenting to it in the preſent caſe, ſhould appear to be rather an act of politeneſs and generoſity than otherwiſe, I leave you to your own reflections whether you have made choice of the moſt happy expreſſions to obtain it.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Lieut. Gen. BURGOYNE."

Gen. Burgoyne ſome how communicated to Viſcount Howe the ſubject of the frigate, who wrote Gen. Burgoyne the following letter ſome time after, but before the tranſports came round.

EAGLE, RHODE-ISLAND, *Feb.* 3, 1778.

"SIR,

"I AM much concerned to find by your letter, I had the honour to receive from you, on the return

of

of Capt. Piper, that you have ſuffered ſo greatly in your health. But I hope that a ſpeedy removal to a milder climate will contribute to your effectual recovery.

"The tranſports have only been delayed to take the precautions neceſſary for their ſafe paſſage at this ſeaſon of the year. As it is not to be expected that the frigate ordered for your reception, though carrying a flag of truce, and reſtricted from every act of hoſtility in conſequence, whilſt attending this ſervice, ſhould be admitted within the port of Boſton, the commander, Capt. Jacobs, will be to land a letter under the ſame ſanction, for giving you notice of his arrival off the entrance of the port. He will wait to be favoured in your anſwer with notice of the time you may expect to embark, on which occaſion, I truſt you will find every facility that your impaired ſtate of health may require.

(Signed) HOWE."

Thus did the Admiral's opinion perfectly coincide with that of our General's.

But Congreſs had paſſed a reſolution, on the 8th day of January, upon principles clearly expreſſed in a report of a committee, upon which the reſolution was founded.

"That the embarkation of Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, and the troops under his command, be ſuſpended, till a diſtinct and explicit ratification of the Convention of Saratoga ſhall be properly notified by the Court of Great-Britain, to Congreſs."

Our General's correſpondence with Gen. Burgoyne, reſpecting the frigate, &c. was tranſmitted to Congreſs, and the Preſident ſoon after wrote him—

"The Houſe appeared to be pleaſed with your "conduct in every reſpect relative to that officer."

Gen. Burgoyne applied to Congreſs for leave to go to Europe himſelf; but Congreſs did not then think

think proper to grant his requeſt. Although this denial muſt have been very painful to the General, he did not expreſs himſelf, or write any thing in the leaſt improper. He obſerved to our General, that he was ſorry; for that not only his health urged his departure, but that every day he was detained here, gave his enemies at home an opportunity for piercing the wound of his reputation the deeper.

But Col. Kingſton was not ſo prudent as the General: a packet of letters which Gen. Burgoyne wiſhed to ſend to Gen. Howe, was ſent to our General for inſpection; among theſe was one from Col. Kingſton to Lord Harcourt, in which, after obſerving that fortune had not ſhewn them the ſmooth ſide of her face, yet they thought their misfortunes honourable, proceeded, that he, (Gen. Burgoyne) was not well, but you know his firmneſs. But I think, "the inſincerity of France, bigotry of Spain, or the vindictive Portugueſe, ſituated as he is, would not have ſought for means unneceſſarily to detain him." This inſult to the authority of the country induced our General to detain this letter, and he notified Gen. Burgoyne of it, adding, that while it was his wiſh to gratify the officers as much as poſſible in writing to their friends, he expected they would be cautious and prudent in their manner of expreſſion. When the American Deputy-Adjutant-General gave the letter from our General to Gen. Burgoyne, and he had read it, he obſerved, "I told Col. Kingſton that Gen. Heath would not let that letter paſs;" he ſhould have done more—forbid his making the attempt.

Another ſerious matter took place about this time: Col. Henley, who had the immediate command at Cambridge, a brave and good officer, but warm and quick in his natural temper, having ordered

dered ſome priſoners who were under guard turned out, that he might examine them, one of them treated him, as he judged, with much inſolence; upon which he pricked him with a ſword, or bayonet. Gen. Burgoyne immediately preſented a complaint againſt Col. Henley, charging him with barbarous and wanton conduct, and intentional murder, as appears in the following letter.

CAMBRIDGE, *Jan. 9th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"A REPORT has been made to me of a diſturbance that happened at the barracks on Wedneſday afternoon, for which I am much concerned; and though the provocations from your people, which originally occaſioned it, were of the moſt atrocious nature, I was willing the offender on our part ſhould be properly puniſhed. But Col. Henley, not content with that, made priſoners of eighteen innocent men, and ſent them on board a guard-ſhip, as alleged by your order. It is not only a duty to my ſituation to demand the immediate diſcharge of theſe men, together with a ſatisfactory apology; but I alſo mean it as an attention to you, Sir, that I give you an immediate opportunity to diſavow ſo unjuſtifiable a proceeding, as committing men to the worſt of priſons upon vague report, caprice and paſſion.

"Inſults and provocations, at which the moſt placid diſpoſitions would revolt, are daily given to the officers and ſoldiers of this army. Regular, decent complaints are received by your officers, ſometimes with haughtineſs, ſometimes with deriſion, but always without redreſs. Theſe evils flow, Sir, from the general tenor of language and conduct held by Col. Henley, which encourages his inferiors, and ſeems calculated to excite the moſt bloody purpoſes.

"For

"For want of sufficient information, and not bringing myself to believe it possible that facts as related by common report could be true, I have hitherto declined taking public notice of this man; but upon positive grounds, I now and hereby formerly accuse Col. Henley of behaviour heinously criminal as an officer, and unbecoming a man; of the most indecent, violent, vindictive severity against unarmed men; and of intentional murder. I demand prompt and satisfactory justice, and will not doubt your readiness to give it. Whenever you will inform me that a proper tribunal is appointed, I will take care that undeniable evidence shall be produced to support these charges.

I am, &c.

(Signed) J. BURGOYNE."

To which our General returned the following answer:

{HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *Jan.* 10*th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOUR's, of yesterday's date, I received the last evening. What provocations you allude to, as having been offered by my troops, I am at loss to determine. The insults and abuses which they have received, I will venture to say, unless I have been most grossly misinformed, are unparalleled; and whether you are willing or unwilling, Sir, offenders shall no longer pass with impunity.

"If it can be made to appear, that any of those soldiers sent to the guard-ship by my orders, are innocent, they shall be released from their confinement: but with respect to such as have been guilty of violating my standing orders of the garrison, instead of disavowing or making any apology for the confinement of such, be assured that I do most explicitly

plicitly avow it. And as I have before obſerved to your Excellency in a former letter, of which you may be aſſured, I ſhall at all times endeavour to found my orders on the principles of honour, reaſon and juſtice, and not to infringe thoſe delicate principles in others: ſo alſo be aſſured, Sir, that ſuch my orders ſhall be obeyed by every officer and ſoldier placed under my direction; and ſuch as have the hardineſs to tranſgreſs them, ſhall abide the conſequences.

"I have been informed of late, that ſome have hinted, that ſuch of your troops as break my orders, ought to be tried and puniſhed by your orders. Even the mention of ſuch a thing, I conceive to be (to uſe your own words in a late letter, with a little variation) a ſort of inſult, that a man of military erudition in any country would be aſhamed of, as being repugnant to every idea of military diſcipline; and from my opinion of your military knowledge, I cannot admit that you ever hinted it.

"To convince you that it is my fixed determination, to inquire into all abuſes, whether committed by my own troops, or thoſe of the Convention, whilſt they remain within my department, I have ordered Col. Henley under arreſt, and appointed a Court of Inquiry, whereof Brig. Gen. Glover is Preſident, to examine into the grounds of your complaint, on Wedneſday next, at 10 o'clock, A. M. at Cambridge; and if any complaints have heretofore paſſed unredreſſed it is becauſe they have not been laid before me. You hinted to me when I had the pleaſure of ſeeing you laſt at Cambridge, that one of my officers had been enticing ſome of the troops of the Convention to enter our ſervice. I then informed you, that if you would ſend the complaint, I would immediately bring the officer to trial. You promiſed

to

to do it, but I have not yet received it. I now call upon you to exhibit that charge, or any other, that you have to make againſt any officer under my command, for practices of that kind, or any other; being with yourſelf fully determined that all my conduct reſpecting the Convention ſhall be notorious, and beyond the powers of ſubterfuge to explain away. Complaints of moſt enormous abuſes, have lately been made to me; one, of the conduct of a number of officers on the evening or night of the 25th of December, at Bradiſh's tavern; others, of priſoners being reſcued from the guards—centinels abuſed and inſulted on their poſts—paſſes counterfeited, and others filled up in the moſt affrontive manner; and of late, ſeveral highway robberies committed in the environs of the garriſon—one the laſt evening, in which a gentleman was robbed of between 7 and 800 dollars, and a watch. The robberies I do not charge to your people, as it is unknown who were the perpetrators; but there are ſeveral reaſons to ſuſpect it. All theſe, Sir, tend not only to exaſperate the troops, but to enrage the inhabitants of the country, who view ſuch abuſes as inſufferable. I therefore call upon you to exert your endeavours to ſuppreſs all abuſes, as far as is in your power.

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Lieut. Gen. BURGOYNE."

Col. Henley was ordered under arreſt, and Col. Lee to take the command at Cambridge; and the general order of the 10th of January announced—

"Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne having entered a complaint againſt Col. Henley, charging him with groſs miſconduct while in command at Cambridge; the honour of the United States, and the juſtice due to

an officer of Col. Henley's character, demand a public inquiry: for which purpose a Court of Inquiry is to sit at Cambridge on Wednesday next, at 10 o'clock in the morning, at such place as the President shall appoint."

Brigadier-General GLOVER, *President.*

Col. M. Jackson,
Col. Nixon,
Col. Lee,
Col. H. Jackson,
} *Members.*

All persons concerned, to attend the Court.

Gen. Burgoyne found fault, that a Court of Inquiry only was appointed, and not a Court-Martial. He was answered, that this was frequently the case; that it did not preclude the latter; and where an officer of rank, and in particular one who had the immediate command was the object, this previous step was both justifiable and proper. The Court of Inquiry met, and gave in their opinion; and in the general orders of January 18th, the following was announced:—

"The Court, whereof Brig. Gen. Glover was President, appointed by the orders of the 10th inst. to inquire into the grounds of a complaint exhibited by Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne against Col. Henley, late commanding officer of the American troops at Cambridge—after mature consideration, are of opinion, that from the evidence offered on the side of Gen. Burgoyne against Col. Henley, it will be most for the honour of Col. Henley, as well as for the satisfaction of all concerned, that the judgment of a Court-Martial should be taken on his conduct, during his command at Cambridge."

"The General, approving the opinion of the Court, orders that a special general Court-Martial sit on Tuesday next, at 10 o'clock A. M. at the court-house

houſe in Cambridge, for the trial of Col. David Henley, late commanding officer at that poſt, accuſed by Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, of a general tenor of language and conduct, heinouſly criminal as an officer, and unbecoming a man; of the moſt indecent, violent, vindictive ſeverity againſt unarmed men, and of intentional murder.

Brigadier-General GLOVER, *Preſident.*

Col. Weſſon,	Lieut. Col. Popkin,	*Members.*
Col. M. Jackſon,	Maj. Curtis,	
Col. Lee,	Capt. Randall,	
Col. H. Jackſon,	Capt. Langdon,	
Lieut. Col. Colman,	Capt. Sewall,	
Lieut. Col. Badlam,	Capt. Haſtings,	

Lieut. Col. Tudor is deſired to act as Judge-Advocate. All evidences and perſons concerned, to attend the Court."

The Court met, and adjourned ſeveral times, through a long, particular, and tedious trial. Gen. Burgoyne attended, and in a very engaged and eloquent manner ſaid every thing which he judged proper; which, although novel in Courts-Martial, was yet permitted.

The general orders of the 27th of February announced as follows:

"Col. David Henley, late commanding officer of the poſt at Cambridge, tried at the ſpecial general Court-Martial, whereof Brig. Gen. Glover was Preſident, accuſed by Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, of a general tenor of language and conduct, heinouſly criminal as an officer, and unbecoming a man; of the moſt indecent, violent, vindictive ſeverity againſt unarmed men, and of intentional murder.

"The Court, after mature conſideration, are of opinion, that the charge againſt Col. Henley is not ſupported, and that he be diſcharged from his arreſt.

"The

"The General approves the opinion of the Court; thanks them for their unwearied endeavours to inveſtigate the truth; and orders Col. Henley to reaſſume his command at Cambridge immediately.

"The General thinks it to be his duty on this occaſion to obſerve, that although the conduct of Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, (as proſecutor againſt Col. Henley) in the courſe of the foregoing trial, in his ſeveral ſpeeches and pleas, may be warranted by ſome like precedents in Britiſh Courts-Martial, yet as it is altogether novel in the proceedings of any general Court-Martial in the army of the United States of America, whoſe rules and articles of war direct, that the Judge-Advocate-General ſhall proſecute in the name of the United States; and as a different practice tends to render Courts-Martial both tedious and expenſive—he does proteſt againſt this inſtance being drawn into precedent in future."

7th.—A Britiſh ſoldier at Cambridge ſtabbed one of the American guard.

18th.—Intelligence was received from Gov. Cook, that three frigates and twenty-three ſail of tranſports ſailed from Newport, on Sunday the 15th inſtant, ſtanding to the north-eaſt. Our General received a letter from the Preſident of Congreſs, in which he obſerved, "I had the honour of receiving, by Mr. Cloſki, the 5th inſtant, your favour of the 10th ult. including a late correſpondence with Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne; theſe were immediately reported to Congreſs, and tranſmitted to the Board of War, from whence a report has not yet aſcended; therefore I have no particular commands relative to your ſaid diſpatch. I may, however, with propriety and pleaſure intimate, that your conduct towards the Britiſh General and his dependents, receives the continued approbation of Congreſs, if I may be permitted to make this concluſion from the general ſentiments of Members."

23d.

23d.—Juſt before noon, Gen. Lincoln arrived in Boſton from Albany; his leg was recovering faſt, but he was ſtill very lame, and was conveyed from place to place on a moveable bed, with handles, which was fixed on the runners of his ſleigh, with a canopy and curtains, and was convenient alſo to remove into the houſe, &c. In this was blended ingenuity and convenience.

28th.—Intelligence was received that the Britiſh tranſports, deſtined to take away the troops of the Convention, had arrived at Holmes's Hole; and the next day, March 1ſt, that they had arrived at Cape Harbour, Province-Town, Cape Cod. But Gen. Burgoyne was not now to depart.

March 8th.—A cartel arrived from Cape Cod, with the following letter to Gen. Burgoyne:

JUNO, CAPE COD HARBOUR, 4th *March*, 1778.

"SIR,

"I TAKE the earlieſt opportunity, by Lieut. Carter, in the Haarlem cartel, to inform you of the arrival of the tranſports under my charge, and that I am appointed by the Viſcount Howe, to receive you and your ſuit on board the Juno, under my command, for your conveyance to England, when you ſhall be at liberty to embark ſeparately, or together with the troops, as you will let me know in return to be your intention. And I am to acquaint you that I will move the Juno to Nantaſket Road, for facilitating your embarkation, if you will pleaſe to inform me of your having negociated an agreement to ſuch effect, upon faith duly pledged, that no inſult ſhall be offered in the mean time to any of the ſhips of war, or other ſhips and veſſels, appointed for fulfilling the purpoſe of the Convention, and diſtinguiſhed by flags of truce, in teſtimony of the reſtriction they are under from committing any acts of hoſtility. You are otherwiſe to take your paſſage in

the

the Haarlem, in order to your being received on board the Juno, in Cape Cod harbour.

"Inclosed is a list of the transports, with their tonnage, that you may be able to settle the proper arrangement of the troops destined for Europe; for every thing else I refer you to our meeting on board the Juno, where I have a number of private letters for you, Gen. Phillips, and Col. Kingston, and a large box of letters for the army.

I am, &c.

(Signed) HUGH DALRYMPLE.

Lieut. Gen. BURGOYNE."

Gen. Burgoyne having written an answer to Capt. Dalrymple, and submitted it for inspection, requested our General to send it down by the cartel; which he did under the following cover:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *March* 10, 1778.

"SIR,

"INCLOSED are sundry letters from Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, by which you will learn his present situation.

"Although I wish on every occasion to extend the utmost generosity to the gentlemen of the army, yet to allow letters to pass unopened, would be betraying the trust reposed in me. Therefore any idea of granting such an indulgence cannot be admitted.

"If any advantage in the economy of expense to the government of Great-Britain, may be derived from landing any overplus of provisions from the fleet, for the use of the troops of the Convention, I have not the least objection to it; but wish you would ascertain the matter as soon as possible.

"I rest assured, that whilst your vessels enjoy perfect security under the sanction of their flags, not the least molestation or inconvenience will happen to any of our vessels or inhabitants.

"I do

"I do myself the pleasure to send down to the flag a turkey, sent here by Gen. Burgoyne.

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Capt. DALRYMPLE."

Many people having grown jealous that the troops of the Convention had collected and secreted arms in the barracks, they could not be quieted until the matter was ascertained; and on the 18th, our General ordered a strict search to be made, when nothing was found but the officer's fuzees, to which by the Convention they had a right. A *wag*, coming from the barracks, was asked if any thing was found; he answered, "Yes—in one of the rooms a large brass mortar." This spread, and was alarming to be sure. The fact was, that in one of the rooms there was a large bell-metal pestle and mortar, for family use. Jealousy, like the other passions, although a virtue in itself, may exceed its bounds; and when it does, "trifles, light as air, to jealous minds are strong as proofs of holy writ."

Capt. Dalrymple wrote to Gen. Burgoyne again, on the 15th, and proposed to put the spare provisions on board one of the flags, and send them up to Boston harbour.

But on the 23d, Capt. Brathwait of the Centurion, wrote the General that he had arrived at Cape Cod, with orders from Viscount Howe for the men-of-war and transports with the provisions on board them to return to Rhode-Island, which they did accordingly.

7th.—General Lincoln left Boston for Hingham; our General accompanied him as far as Milton.

12th.—Intelligence was received that a 40 gun ship had arrived at New-London, laden with cloathing for the United States.

18th.

18th.—A detachment of Col. Henley's regiment marched out of Boſton for the army.

19th.—General Burgoyne having again applied to Congreſs for leave to go to England himſelf, they now gave him liberty. This was joyous to the General, and he wrote our General that he had aſſured himſelf that there would be nothing thrown in the way on his part, and wiſhed for his paſſports. The Preſident of Congreſs, in his letter to our General, by the ſame expreſs, informed him that it was late in the evening when the reſolve, granting Gen. Burgoyne leave to depart, paſſed, and nothing was ſaid reſpecting the ſettlement of the accounts before his departure; but that it was fully his opinion that the former reſolve ſhould be ſtrictly obſerved; for Congreſs had before reſolved, that neither he nor the troops of the Convention ſhould depart, before the accounts were ſettled and paid. Our General, therefore, told General Burgoyne, that this muſt firſt be done, and that then he ſhould meet with no delay: on this he heſitated, and then aſked how the accounts were to be ſettled? He was anſwered—Strictly conformable to the reſolves of Congreſs. He then aſked if Congreſs could be ſerious in their reſolution, requiring in ſpecie the ſame ſum which they had expended in paper money? Our General replied that he ſuppoſed that honourable body were ſerious in all their reſolutions. He then replied that this was unjuſt, for the odds was double; and appealed to our General to ſay whether he thought it juſt himſelf? Our General anſwered, that as an executive officer, it was not for him to judge or determine whether the orders of his ſuperiors were juſt or not. General Burgoyne replied, that was true. He was then told, that if he did not chooſe to pay for the ſupplies, the act allowed him to replace them, in quality and quantity; and this

ſeemed

ſeemed to remove his objections. After further diſcuſſion the two Generals pledged their faith and ſacred honour to each other, in which they both had the fulleſt confidence, that General Burgoyne ſhould proceed to Rhode-Iſland, accompanied by ſuch officers as our General might think proper to ſend, to whom General Burgoyne ſhould pay in ſpecie the amount of the ſupplies furniſhed in the Quarter-Maſter's department; and that he ſhould forward in veſſels bearing flags, proviſions of the different ſpecies they had received, within a certain number of days ſtipulated; that no advantage ſhould be taken by delay occaſioned by ſtreſs of weather; that a box of gold, as a pledge for any deficiencies in the proviſions, ſhould be depoſited with our General, the balance of which, after the full ſettlement of the accounts, to be paid to the ſenior officer of the troops of the Convention.

April 2d.—General Burgoyne came into Boſton, and dined at head-quarters; and before he took leave of our General, obſerved, "I know your ſituation, Sir, and the difficulty of obtaining many foreign neceſſaries, you may want or wiſh. If you will give me a memorandum, on my arrival in England, I will with great pleaſure forward them to you." Our General thanked him for his politeneſs, but was careful not to mention any, chooſing rather to ſuffer with his fellow-countrymen the neceſſities of the times, than to avail himſelf of ſo excluſive a favour.

5th.—Between 11 and 12 o'clock General Burgoyne left Cambridge for Rhode-Iſland, accompanied by Colonel Pollard and Samuel Barrett, Eſq.

8th.—The Raleigh frigate, it was learnt, had arrived at Portſmouth, (N. H.)

A part of the Convention troops were ordered to be removed to Rutland, in the county of Worceſter, and temporary barracks were erected for the purpoſe.

15th.—A diviſion of the Convention troops marched for Rutland under eſcort of a detachment of militia, commanded by Major Read. Our General received a letter from the Preſident of Congreſs, dated the 4th inſtant, in which he obſerved, "Yeſterday I had the honour of preſenting to Congreſs your favours of the 21ſt and 24th of March; and, although I have received no particular commands relative to their ſeveral contents, I am warranted by the general voice of Members to intimate, that you have received the applauſe of the Houſe, for your determination reſpecting the adjuſtment of accounts with General Burgoyne."

18th.—Mr. Barrett returned from Rhode-Iſland, accompanied by a Britiſh Commiſſary, Major Morriſon, who was ſent on by Gen. Pigot, to negociate a plan for the future ſupply of the troops of the Convention.

19th.—About 2 o'clock, P. M. a waggon arrived from Rhode-Iſland with a large ſum of money, received in diſcharge of the accounts, and for the troops of the Convention.

The ſame day, Mr. Dean arrived from France, with the highly important intelligence, that the Court of France had acknowledged the Independency of the United States of America, and a treaty of alliance was concluded.

22d.—Five ſail of victuallers arrived in the lower harbour from Rhode-Iſland, with proviſions, for a replace of thoſe ſupplied the troops of the Convention.

28th.—The Britiſh hand-bill for quieting America, as it was called, was received at Boſton. It was forwarded from Connecticut, where it had been ſent by Governor Tryon.—Governor Trumbull had made a moſt magnanimous reply.

30th.

30th.—A valuable prize was ſent into Boſton, laden with dry goods, teas, flour, &c.

May 4th.—Several French ſhips had arrived with goods and ſtores from France for the United States.

5th.—The French frigate Nymphe, Capt. Senneville, arrived in Boſton harbour, and ſailed out again on the 16th.

23d.—Certain intelligence was received, that the French Ambaſſador left England about the 20th of the preceding March, and that the Engliſh Ambaſſador had returned to England.

30th.—The Britiſh made an excurſion to Tiverton and Little-Compton, and did ſome damage.

Our General concluded with Gen. Pigot a ſyſtem for the future ſupply of the troops of the Convention, by ſending proviſions from Rhode-Iſland. This mode tended to the increaſe of proviſions in the States, and to the eaſier ſupply of our own troops. The plan was ſubmitted to Congreſs, who were pleaſed to honour it with their approbation, which they expreſſed in the following reſolution.

In CONGRESS, *May 22d*, 1778.

"*Reſolved*, That Congreſs approve of Maj. Gen. Heath's conduct relative to the propoſals made by Maj. Gen. Pigot, for ſupplying with proviſions the troops who ſurrendered priſoners under the Convention of Saratoga.

"That the Preſident be directed to inform Maj. Gen. Heath, that Congreſs expect that all aſſiſtance afforded to the enemy, in unloading, ſtoring, or tranſporting proviſions for the ſupport of the Convention priſoners, be paid for in ſolid coin, agreeably to the ſpirit of their reſolution of the 19th of December laſt."

The Convention troops complained exceedingly of this diſcrimination in payment, becauſe it was notorious

notorious that there was a conſiderable difference between paper money and ſpecie; indeed, at firſt view, it ſeems ſcarcely reconcileable on the principles of juſtice and equity; but when the grounds on which the reſolve of the 19th of Dec. 1777 is predicated, are conſidered, it ſeems to place the matter in a different light.—It is expreſſed as follows:—

In CONGRESS, *Dec. 9th*, 1777.

"Whereas Sir William Howe, Commander in Chief of his Britannic Majeſty's forces, has required that proviſions ſhould be ſent in, for the ſubſiſtence of the American priſoners in his poſſeſſion, and for the purchaſe of ſuch neceſſaries as they may ſtand in need of, and has prohibited the circulation of the money ſtruck by the authority of theſe States, within ſuch parts of the country as are at preſent ſubjected to his power, whereby great difficulties have occurred in relieving the diſtreſſes of the American priſoners; and whereas large ſums of continental bills of credit have been counterfeited and iſſued by the agents, emiſſaries and abettors of Sir W. Howe,—

"*Reſolved*, That the accounts of all proviſions and other neceſſaries, which already have been, or which hereafter may be ſupplied by the public to priſoners in the power of theſe States, ſhall be diſcharged by either receiving from the Britiſh Commiſſary of Priſoners, or any of his agents, proviſions or other neceſſaries equal in quantity and kind to what have been ſupplied, or the amount thereof in gold or ſilver, at the rate of four ſhillings and ſixpence ſterling for every dollar of the currency of theſe States; and that all theſe accounts be liquidated and diſcharged, previous to the releaſe of any priſoners to whom proviſions or other neceſſaries ſhall have been ſo ſupplied.

Extract from the Minutes.

(Signed) C. THOMSON."

By

By the foregoing it appears, that the Britiſh were allowed to replace any and all the ſupplies which were furniſhed to them, and in that way might make all the ſavings in their power; and certainly they ought to be checked, if they attempted to deſtroy that currency on which the States had ſolely to rely for the proſecution of the war, which had been *forced* upon them by this ſame power.

June 17th.—A Britiſh officer was ſhot by an American centinel on Proſpect-Hill, the officer attempting to paſs, contrary to the ſtanding orders. The centinel was immediately relieved and put under guard, and as ſoon as the official account of the event was received by our General, he wrote the following letter to Gen. Phillips:

{HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *June* 17, 1778, 8 *o'clock*, P. M.

"SIR,

"I AM this moment informed that an officer of the Convention has been ſhot by one of our ſentries. I have ordered the man into cloſe confinement, and have directed the Town-Major to deſire the Coroner of the county of Middleſex to ſummon a Jury of Inqueſt to ſit on the body; and I deſire that it may not be removed until that ſtep be taken. I can only ſay, Sir, that you may be aſſured that I will take every ſtep in my power, which honour and juſtice require.

"Your letters of this date were handed to me by the perſon who brought the diſagreeable news of the officer's being ſhot. I will anſwer them to-morrow.

I am, Sir, your obedient ſervant,

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

A few minutes after our General had ſent his letter, he received the following from Gen. Phillips:

CAMBRIDGE,

CAMBRIDGE, *June* 17, 1778.

"MURDER and death has at length taken place. An officer, riding out from the barracks on Proſpect Hill, has been ſhot by an American centinel. I leave the horrors incident to that bloody diſpoſition, which has joined itſelf to rebellion in theſe Colonies, to the feelings of all Europe. I do not aſk for juſtice, for I believe every principle of it is fled from this Province.

"I demand liberty to ſend an officer to Gen. Sir Henry Clinton, by way of the head-quarters of Gen. Waſhington, with my report of this murder.

(Signed) W. PHILLIPS, Maj. Gen.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

The next morning our General wrote the following to Gen. Phillips:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *June* 18, 1778.

"SIR,

"IMMEDIATELY upon my receiving the diſagreeable report, the laſt evening, that an officer of the Convention had been ſhot by an American centinel, and that the centinel was confined, I ordered him to be cloſely kept ſo, and the Coroner of the county of Middleſex to be certified that a Jury of Inqueſt might be ſummoned to ſit on the body of the officer. Decency and the utmoſt attention, in any country, could not have done more. A few minutes after I had diſpatched the officer with the foregoing orders, I received your letter, couched in ſuch terms that I am at a loſs what epithets to give it. Were it even certain that the ſhooting of the officer was an act of the moſt deliberate wilful murder, why ſhould you charge theſe free independent States with a bloody diſpoſition and with rebellion, and this State in particular as void of every principle of juſtice? Although

though I ever had and ſtill have a perſonal regard for you, and wiſh in every reſpect to treat you with the utmoſt generoſity; yet that duty which I owe to the honour and dignity of the United States, will not allow me to paſs unnoticed ſuch expreſſions as are contained in your letter; and I cannot put any other interpretation upon them, than that they are a violent infraction of your parole, moſt ſacredly given. I do conceive it to be my duty, and I do hereby reſtrict you to the limits of your houſe, gardens and yard, and to the direct road from your quarters to the quarters of the troops of the Convention, on Proſpect and Winter Hills; expecting from you a parole, for propriety of conduct within thoſe limits; which if you refuſe, I ſhall be under the neceſſity of ordering you to narrower limits, until I can obtain the pleaſure of the Honorable the Congreſs, touching this matter, to whom I ſhall tranſmit your letter, and crave their directions.

"As to your demand of liberty for an officer to proceed to Sir Henry Clinton, with a "*report of this murder*," as you are pleaſed to expreſs yourſelf, I have only to reply, that as ſoon as the Coroner has taken an inquiſition, in which all the evidence reſpecting this unhappy affair will be contained, I ſhall tranſmit a copy thereof to Congreſs; and I ſhall have no objection to your ſending a copy alſo to Sir Henry Clinton, by way of the head-quarters of his Excellency General Waſhington, (if his Excellency ſhould approve of it) together with any juſt and decent repreſentations which you may think neceſſary to make on this occaſion or any other, after I have examined ſuch letters; but as to an officer's going to Sir Henry Clinton, it is altogether unneceſſary—ſo you will pleaſe to excuſe my refuſal of it.

I am, Sir, your obedient ſervant,

(Signed) W. HEATH, Major-General.

"P. S.

"P. S. I shall not at this time comment on the indelicate manner in which your letter is addressed.
Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

"I, WILLIAM PHILLIPS, Major-General and senior officer of the troops under the restrictions of the Convention of Saratoga, do promise and engage, on my word and honour, and on the faith of a gentleman, to remain in the quarters now assigned to me in Cambridge, in the State of Massachusetts-Bay, and at no time to exceed or pass the limits of the gardens and yards adjoining and belonging to said quarters, except in the road by the nearest and most direct route from my said quarters to Prospect and Winter Hills, and the limits of said hills within the chain of sentries—until it shall be permitted or ordered otherwise by the Continental General commanding in this State, his Excellency General Washington, or the Honorable Congress of the United States of America; and that I will not, directly or indirectly, give any intelligence to the enemies of the said United States, or either of them, or do or say any thing in opposition to or in prejudice of the measures and proceedings of any Congress for the said States, during my continuance here as aforesaid, or until I am duly exchanged or discharged.

Given under my hand, at Cambridge, this eighteenth day of June, 1778."

{HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *June* 18, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOU will immediately repair to Cambridge, and wait upon Maj. Gen. Phillips: present him the letter addressed to him. After he has read the letter, present the parole; if he signs it, well; if he refuses, you will please to inform him, that in consequence

quence of the indecent, dishonourable, and highly insulting expressions in his letter of yesterday, against the honour and dignity of the Free, Sovereign, and Independent States of America, and in prejudice of the measures and proceedings of the Honorable the Congress—as it is my duty, so it is my express orders, that he, the said Maj. Gen. Phillips, be restricted to the limits of his house, yards and gardens, beyond which he is not to pass, until it be otherwise ordered; and that you immediately plant and continue by relief so many sentries, as may be necessary to prevent his exceeding those limits. You will give orders that the sentries, so planted, observe a strict decorum and soldier-like behaviour, avoiding insult, and behaving with becoming dignity. After which, you will wait on the next senior officer, and acquaint him of Gen. Phillips being confined.

I am, Sir, your most obedient servant,

(Signed) W. HEATH, Maj. Gen.

Lieut. Col. POLLARD, Dep. Adj. General."

The same day Gen. Phillips wrote our General as follows:

CAMBRIDGE, *June* 18, 1778, 3 *o'clock, P. M.*

"SIR,

"LIEUTENANT Brown, of the 21st regiment, who was shot yesterday by an American centinel, died about midnight in the last night.

"I am informed some person, whom you have sent to examine the body, is now doing it; and, as I suppose every inspection of that sort will be over by to-morrow, I would propose to bury the corpse to-morrow evening. I am to desire to know if you have any objection, and whether you have any particular intentions relating to the body of the murdered officer. If it is to be allowed Christian buri-

al, I would wish to depositit in the vault appropriated for strangers, in the Protestant church at Cambridge. In this case, I am to desire you will give the necessary permission for this purpose, and allow a sufficient number of men from the barracks to assist in carrying down the corpse from the barracks to the church.

"As I am totally ignorant to whom it may be necessary to apply for leave to open the church, it obliges me to give you this trouble; and I hope, if permission is granted, that it may be done so fully, as will prevent the sanguinary people of this country from insulting and treating with indignity the dead body of the unfortunate officer, who, in their rage, revengeful tempers, and barbarity, they have put to death. I am, Sir,

Your most obedient humble servant,

(Signed) W. PHILLIPS.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To this letter the following was returned:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *June* 19, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOUR's of yesterday afternoon was handed to me the last evening; I most sincerely regret the unfortunate death of Lieut. Brown.

"As I apprehend the Coroner has taken his inquisition, or will do it this morning, which is in conformity to the laws of the land in that case made and provided, for the sole purpose of investigating the truth of facts—you not only have my permission, but request, that every mark of respect may be paid to the corpse of the deceased; and you have my permission also for such a number of non-commissioned officers and privates to attend, as may be necessary to bear the

corpse

corpſe from the funeral houſe to the place of interment.

"I do not know under whoſe direction the church at Cambridge now is; but I have given orders to Maj. Hopkins and the Town-Major to afford every kind of aſſiſtance in their power, and to inquire who has the direction, and to obtain permiſſion. I have alſo given orders that decency be exhibited by our troops during the time of proceſſion of interment, which the ſolemnity of ſo mournful an occaſion points out as the duty of rational beings; and from the univerſal reſpectful behaviour of the people of this country on ſuch occaſions, you may be ſure that not the leaſt inſult will be offered.

I am, Sir, your moſt obedient ſervant,
(Signed) W. HEATH.

Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

19th.—Gen. Phillips wrote another letter, as follows:

CAMBRIDGE, *June 19th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"I SHALL not animadvert upon, or anſwer any part of your letter of yeſterday, except what relates to your meaning to reſtrict me to my houſe, garden and yards, and to the direct road from my quarters to the quarters of the troops of the Convention on Proſpect and Winter Hills, and requiring my ſigning a new parole for my propriety of conduct within thoſe limits.

"When by the treaty of Convention of Saratoga the officers were to be admitted on parole, it was clearly intended that a liberal interpretation was to be given of that agreement; and, to uſe your own words, generous limits were to be granted. I will not deny that the limits have been ſufficient.

"I apprehend,

"I apprehend, Sir, that under no ſenſe or explanation of the treaty, the officers were to be denied intercourſe with the ſoldiers—indeed, there is an article particularly on that point; and by reſtricting me to my quarters, allowing me only the paſſage to the barracks by the direct road, you would certainly have reſtricted me as you have done ſeveral other officers, from whom you have taken the benefit of their parole, allowing for the diſtinction of my rank, having obtained a quarter inſtead of a barrack: it ſeemed therefore a very extraordinary propoſal made to me that I ſhould ſign a parole under a reſtriction which deprived me of any advantage ariſing from my giving one, according to the article on that ſubject in the treaty of Convention of Saratoga; and on this conſideration I refuſed it.

"You have, Sir, made me a priſoner in my quarters, under a guard, and I am perfectly at eaſe about it—ſhall bear it, Sir, and any other violence of power which may happen to me, with more patience than you may ſuppoſe. I am very regardleſs about inſults or injuries done me perſonally—I feel only, and then ſeverely, when any are offered to the troops I command.

"But, Sir, you attempt at much more than reſtricting my perſon; for in a paper ſent me this day, being your inſtructions to Lieut. Col. Pollard, dated June 18, 1778, you direct him, after he has planted centinels around my quarters, that he is to "wait on the next ſenior officer, and acquaint him of General Phillips being confined." I am to inform you, Sir, that, bearing the King's commiſſion, I ſhall conſider myſelf ſenior officer of the troops of the Convention; and every officer of them will obey my orders as far as their preſent ſituation will allow. You may confine my perſon, but cannot have power to take from

from me my military place, nor my connexion with the Convention troops—it is too extravagant an idea to ſuppoſe you capable of: ſo little can it be in the power of an individual to deprive me of the commiſſion I hold, that were theſe Colonies really acknowledged Independent and Sovereign States, it would not be in the power of their government to deprive an officer of another nation of his military commiſſion, how far ſoever they might ſtretch and extend their power over his perſon. But, Sir, I muſt be allowed to declare, that until the Colonies are acknowledged by Great-Britain to be Independent Sovereign States, I cannot view them in any other light than that in which they are conſidered by Great-Britain.

"As you will not allow me to ſend an officer to Sir Henry Clinton, I muſt requeſt to take advantage of your expreſs for ſending my report and repreſentations to him; and I will beg to know when I muſt ſend you my letters.

I am, Sir,
Your moſt obedient, humble ſervant,
(Signed) W. PHILLIPS.
Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To which the following anſwer was returned the next day:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *June* 20, 1778.

"SIR,

"ANOTHER of your favours of yeſterday was handed to me this morning. You may be aſſured that the reaſon of my reſtricting you to your quarters, the day before yeſterday, was perſonally no agreeable ſervice. Duty to the honour and dignity of my country, made it indiſpenſably neceſſary. Apprehending that ſo great a reſtriction from your former

former limits as I pointed out, might be conſtrued by you a diſſolution of your parole, I thought it neceſſary and alſo reaſonable that you ſhould give a new one. I wiſhed that you might retain your quarters, and at the ſame time have a free intercourſe with the troops who are quartered at a diſtance from you; this diſtance is ſo conſiderable that a parole is neceſſary. I acknowledge that by the Convention, you are to be admitted on parole, and this parole is for propriety of conduct under ſuch admittance; but that parole being forfeited, by miſconduct, ceaſes to be, and confinement in proportion to the offence, no breach of the Convention, but fully juſtifiable upon every principle of reaſon and juſtice.

"It was never in my idea to take away your commiſſion, or diſſolve your connexion with the troops of the Convention; but, while under confinement, your power of acting might with propriety be ſuſpended, ſo far as reſpected the tranſacting of public buſineſs between myſelf and you; but perſonal regard has prevented my going that length, any further than to notify the next officer of your confinement.

"I do not inſiſt that you, as an officer in the Britiſh army, are obliged to view the Free, Independent and Sovereign States of America, in any other light than they are acknowledged by the government whoſe ſervice you are in. But, under your preſent ſituation and circumſtances, I do inſiſt that you ſhall not openly inſult the honour and dignity of theſe Sovereign States with impunity.

I am, Sir,

Your obedient ſervant,

(Signed) W. HEATH, Major-General.

Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

"*Middleſex*,

"*Middleſex*, ff.

"AN inqueſt taken at Cambridge, within the ſaid county of Middleſex, on the 18th of June, A.D. 1778, before Joel Smith, one of the Coroners for the county aforeſaid, upon view of the body of Lieut. Richard Brown, one of the Britiſh officers (Charleſtown, in the county aforeſaid) then and there being dead, by oaths of William Howe, Benjamin Lock, John Brown, Ebenezer Steadman, Samuel Manning, Nathaniel Auſtin, Joſeph Read, jun. James Hill, Thomas Barret, Benjamin Barker, Aaron Hill, Iſaac Bradiſh, James Munro, Joſeph Johnſon, good and lawful men of Cambridge aforeſaid, who being charged and ſworn to inquire for the ſake of the government and people of the Maſſachuſetts-Bay, when, and by what means, and how the ſaid Richard Brown came to his death—upon their oath do ſay, that the ſaid Richard Brown was ſhot with a fire-arm by the centinel in Charleſtown, near Proſpect-Hill, between the hours of five and ſix, P. M. on the 17th day of June, A. D. 1778, in attempting to paſs the centinel with two women, after being properly challenged by ſaid centinel—and ſo came to death.

JOEL SMITH, *Coroner.*

Nathaniel Auſtin,	James Munro,
Joſeph Read, jun.	Joſeph Johnſon,
James Hill,	William Howe,
Thomas Barret,	Benjamin Lock,
Benjamin Barker,	John Brown,
Aaron Hill,	Ebenezer Steadman,
Iſaac Bradiſh,	Samuel Manning.

CAMBRIDGE, *June* 18, 1778."

Extract

Extract of a Letter from Major-General HEATH *to the Preſident of Congreſs, dated Head-Quarters, Boſton, June* 19, 1778.

"SINCE my laſt, of the 9th inſtant, I have received the honour of your's of the 23d, by Capt. Nevers.

"The day before yeſterday, one of our centinels, poſted at the foot of Proſpect-Hill, ſhot a Lieut. Richard Brown, of the troops of the Convention, for not ſtopping when repeatedly challenged, as he was riding out of the lines with two women. The orders given to the centinels being not to allow any officer without ſide-arms, or non-commiſſioned officer, private ſoldier, woman or child, without a written paſſport, to paſs the chain of ſentries. Immediately upon my receiving the report of the officer's being ſhot, and that the centinel was confined, I gave orders for his being kept ſo, and notice to be given to the Coroner of the county of Middleſex, that a Jury of Inqueſt might ſit on the body for the inveſtigation of the truth of facts; at the ſame time I wrote to Maj. Gen. Phillips—I do myſelf the honour to incloſe copy thereof, No. 1; a few minutes after, I received a paper from him, No. 2; the next morning I again wrote him, No. 3; and a parole, No. 4; and gave Col. Pollard written orders for the delivery thereof, No. 5. Gen. Phillips refuſing to ſign the parole, Col. Pollard, in obedience to my orders, reſtricted him to the limits therein mentioned, and planted three centinels around the houſe and gardens; in which ſtate matters now remain."

In CONGRESS, *July* 7, 1778.

"*Reſolved*, That Congreſs approve of Maj. Gen. Heath's conduct reſpecting Maj. Gen. Phillips, conſequent

ſequent upon the death of Lieut. Richard Brown, of the troops of the Convention.

Extract from the Minutes.

CHARLES THOMSON, Secretary."

The whole of the foregoing correſpondence was publiſhed by order of Congreſs; and our General was informed that it was left for him to conduct towards the Britiſh General, as to the continuance of his arreſt, as he might judge the honour of the United States required. Gen. Phillips continuing to exhibit the ſame temper, or it rather growing upon him, he was continued in his arreſt, until the troops of the Convention were ordered to be removed to Charlotteville in Virginia. It has before been obſerved, that the officers had certain articles preſcribed to them, for their government in quarters, and that theſe were drawn into the parole, and ſubſcribed by them. If any abuſes took place, a Court of Inquiry was directed to inveſtigate the complaints, and report to our General; thus giving the accuſed officers an opportunity to exculpate their conduct, if it was in their power; and no officer could wiſh more than our General to treat them with generoſity and indulgence, as far as was compatible with good order and diſcipline. But notwithſtanding the fairneſs of this mode of procedure, Gen. Phillips forbid the officers appearing before any Court ſo appointed; and on the 18th ult. Mr. Bibby, the Deputy-Adjutant-General to the troops of the Convention, came into a Court of Inquiry, and declared the following, which, in order to have the whole together, we now retroſpect.

"Maj. Gen. Phillips will not permit any officer under his command to be brought before a Court of Inquiry of the American troops, for the purpoſe of ſcrutinizing their conduct; but if any complaints

are lodged againſt any Britiſh officers, and Maj. Gen. Heath ſhall deſire their conduct to be inquired into, Maj. Gen. Phillips will give ſuch orders as are cuſtomary in ſuch caſes among the Britiſh troops.

By order of Maj. Gen. Phillips:

(Signed) THOS. BIBBY, Dep. Adj. Gen.

MONDAY, *May* 18, 1778."

The ſame day, Gen. Phillips ſent a letter to our General, expreſſive of the ſame ſentiments; to which the following anſwer was ſent to him.

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *May* 19, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOUR favour of yeſterday, came to hand the laſt evening; and, I muſt confeſs, contained matter novel and ſurpriſing to me. What ideas of a copartnerſhip in command you have entertained, I cannot tell. From the beginning, I have found a diſpoſition in the ſenior officer of the Convention, to aſſume the right and authority of trying and puniſhing offenders for breaches of my orders. This I ever have and ever ſhall view in no other light than that of inſult. As ſuch, I repreſented it to his Excellency Lieut. Gen. Burgoyne, whoſe good ſenſe and thorough knowledge of diſcipline, led him, in a letter to me of the 13th Jan. to yield the matter in the following words: "I do not mean to deny that you have a right to take juſtice into your own hands." Indeed it is a ſubject, concerning which, having heretofore ſaid and wrote very fully, I ſhall not at this time dwell long upon. As to agreement or copartnerſhip in command, it is abſurd. In military command there muſt be one ſupreme head; at preſent, the Honorable Congreſs have honoured me with the command of this department, and I imagined that no officer within its limits would dare diſpute it.

"My

"My orders, as I have repeatedly heretofore declared, ſhall ever be founded on the principles of honour, reaſon and juſtice, and not to infringe thoſe delicate principles in others; ſo I again declare that ſuch my orders ſhall not be broken or diſputed, by any officer or ſoldier, placed under my direction, with impunity. The matter of command is no hidden myſtery; the uſage and cuſtoms of nations are known. The celebrated Vattel, Puffendorff and Grotius, with whoſe writings I dare ſay you are acquainted, elegantly explain how an army that ſubmits to another, whether the conditions are more or leſs honorary to themſelves, are to conduct whilſt they remain within the limits of the victors' camp, or juriſdiction of their country. But I ſhall not ſpend time to reaſon on a ſubject which would reflect diſhonour on myſelf to allow even to be diſputed. Therefore, to ſum up all in few words—that, as I am determined to treat the troops of the Convention with ſtrict juſtice and generoſity, ſo I am determined that all offenders againſt my ſtanding orders of the garriſon ſhall be brought to proper puniſhment; that I will not allow the ſenior officer of thoſe troops to try or puniſh for any offence againſt my orders; and, that the truth may at all times be properly inveſtigated, I ſhall, from time to time, when occaſion requires, appoint Courts of Inquiry for that purpoſe; and ſuch as preſume to diſpute or counteract them, I ſhall duly notice.

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH, Major-General.

Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

Gen. Phillips finding that he could not get any thing by aſſault, he next tried his ſkill in attempting to ſap, with the policy of friendſhip; he therefore wrote

wrote another letter of the ſame date, under the name of

"*Private.*"

MONDAY, *May 18th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"I HAVE, this morning, written to you a letter upon public matters. I will now aſſure you, that I am ſorry that my earneſt deſire of preſerving a communication of intelligence, between you and I, does not meet your conſent; and I will lament that you will attend to the ſudden reports you receive, ſo fully, and act upon them, without that good-humoured attention to me, which I had hoped and have endeavoured ſhould ſubſiſt between us. You and I are nearly of an age—I will not diſpute underſtandings with you; but I certainly am an older ſoldier, and muſt neceſſarily know the cuſtoms of armies. Allow me to aſſure you, the manner with which things are taken up ſometimes deviates from military rule. It is a fixed cuſtom to go from the head, downwards; and, when an Enſign offends againſt order, the *General* does not condeſcend to altercate with *him*, but ſends his orders, his deſire, or his opinion, to the commanding officers; and, in your ſending meſſages to young officers, it injures your own conſequence, and certainly hurts mine. Believe me, that I am ſtrict againſt any breach of orders, and will never ſuffer it to paſs uncenſured. I allow, the two officers have behaved ill, and I will puniſh them; but the getting the counterſign was an effect of good humour and ſimplicity in an American ſoldier. Let me once more requeſt of you, to recollect your own ſituation, and it will put mine in a clear view to you. Whenever you have reports againſt any of our troops, let me know them, and I will give inſtant attention to them: but you will, I am ſure, immediately

diately feel, that ſending a threat to two officers, that you would ſend them on board a priſon-ſhip, and never informing me wherefore, was not ſtrictly conformable to good humour or good diſcipline.

"I am, with a very hearty deſire of preſerving harmony and order, and with much perſonal regard,

Your's, &c.

(Signed) W. PHILLIPS.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

To which the following anſwer was returned:

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *May* 19, 1778.

"SIR,

"HAVING, in my other letter of this date, anſwered your's of yeſterday, I now reply to your favour of the ſame date, which you are pleaſed to ſtile "*private.*" I can aſſure you, Sir, that no perſon living wiſhes to act with good humour more than I do; or would take more pains to cultivate harmony and a good underſtanding. But in the preſent caſe, you muſt not expect that I ſhall allow myſelf, either by frowns or flatteries, to give up the dignity of command repoſed in me.

"I wiſh, I am determined, to extend every act of generoſity towards the officers of the Convention, which is compatible with the ſafety and honour of my country. I ſhall not take up matters ſuddenly, or proceed raſhly, unleſs circumſtances ſhall render it unavoidably neceſſary; and although you may be poſſeſſed of a greater ſhare of underſtanding than I am, and an older ſoldier,—yet I have endeavoured to acquire a knowledge of my duty, and the cuſtoms of armies and nations. I am not conſcious of any deviations from thoſe rules or cuſtoms in general adopted by them.

"The General who commands is undoubtedly the fountain of power, and all orders ſhould deſcend from

from him through the proper officers, until they are communicated to the loweſt order of the army; and that commander who diſputes with, or threatens young officers, undoubtedly leſſens his conſequence, and will ſoon become contemptible in the eyes of an army. Nothing of this was in the late tranſactions, that I know of: having received a report of the conduct of the two officers, I ordered them to be confined to their quarters, and appointed a Court of Inquiry to examine into the grounds of the complaint, that I might have a clear underſtanding of the affair, and order accordingly. In all caſes where you or the troops of the Convention are immediately concerned in the orders, I have always directed that you ſhould be ſerved with a copy. As to any threatnings being ſent to the two officers, of confining them on board a guard-ſhip, I know nothing of it.

"The main difficulty ſeems to ariſe from your apprehenſion, that you are to try and puniſh all offenders againſt my orders. Here, Sir, notwithſtanding your knowledge and age in ſoldiery, you much miſtake, and cannot ſupport thoſe your pretenſions by any rule or authority, civil or military. The moment you piled your arms, and marched off the ground, you became ſubject to the ſtanding orders of the victor; and in every juriſdiction through which you marched, or where you remain, are ſubject to all the orders and laws of the place; and ſuch as violate them are obnoxious to puniſhment. The law and cuſtom of nations explicitly tell us, who are to try and puniſh: and, although I do not in the leaſt doubt your ready diſpoſition to inquire into, and even to puniſh offenders againſt my orders—yet when you attempt it, it is ſuch an indignity offered to my authority, that you may be aſſured it ever will raiſe my reſentment; and if it did not, I am confident that yourſelf (at leaſt hereafter) and all

all military men would deſpiſe me for my inſenſibility. In a word, Sir, cultivate thoſe principles of obedience to orders among the officers in your ſituation, recommended and inculcated by the cuſtom and uſage of nations, and dictated by reaſon—and you may depend, that I ſhall exert myſelf to make your ſituation as agreeable as poſſible; and you may be alſo aſſured, that I never ſhall require that of the troops of the Convention, which, in the opinion of the juſt and wiſe in any country, ſhall reflect diſhonour on them. With the ſtrongeſt deſire to cultivate and maintain harmony, and to treat you with reſpect, and with much perſonal regard,

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Maj. Gen. PHILLIPS."

The ſame *feelings* which had great weight in the beginning of the war, continued for ſome time, namely, that Great-Britain was one of the greateſt and moſt powerful nations in the world, in arts, and in arms; while the Americans were yet their Colonies, young, weak, and but barely civilized, ignorant of the world, and eſpecially ſo of arts and of arms. Hence we ſee it ſo frequently breaking out, (until experience had taught them a different opinion.) There was frequently, as in the atmoſphere, placid intervals; but whenever any croſs wind happened to blow, (and there is no ſeaſon or circumſtances without them) then inſtantly appeared thoſe ideas of ſelf-ſuperiority, and contempt for the Americans, which was the true cauſe of many uncomfortable hours. Mankind have the ſame paſſions; the difference lies, in ſome riding with a double curb, while others give the reins.

This Convention buſineſs was a heavy taſk for our General, and the whole ſubject would form an entertaining

taining volume of itself: we are now circumscribed by our limits, and have only given a small specimen for mankind to form an opinion for themselves. In all the letters or conversation which was had on the occasion, we find scarcely a reflection cast by our General on the British nation, the cause in which they were engaged, or against any who were fortunate, or unfortunate; but a uniform desire to make those placed under his orders as comfortable as circumstances would admit; at the same time, an unshaken determination, a perseverant watchfulness, with decent language, to defend the cause and honour of his own country, by arguments supported by the customs and maxims of the civilized world. The hundreds of letters on file, are all proofs of this; and in many instances it was politely acknowledged.

The two following letters, of different dates, are some of the specimens.——Major Harnage had his lady with him.

CAMBRIDGE, *October 30th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"WITH great pleasure I acknowledge the favour of your obliging letter; and Mrs. Harnage joins me, with Capt. Hawker, in returning you our sincere thanks for your kind representation of us, and solicitation in our favour, to the Honorable Congress.

"With your leave, we shall with patience wait the result; and, let the Congress determine in what manner they please, our obligations to you, Sir, will be ever acknowledged.

Believe me, Sir, with respect,

Your obliged humble servant,

HENRY HARNAGE.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

CAMBRIDGE,

CAMBRIDGE, *June* 10, 1779.

"SIR,

"BEING this moment informed that you are about to quit Boſton, I muſt beg leave, previous to your departure, to trouble you with theſe our acknowledgments, for the civility and attention you have been pleaſed to ſhew us; and to aſſure you that Mrs. Harnage, Capt. Hawker and myſelf ſhall ever retain a due ſenſe of all favours, by which you have kindly endeavoured to alleviate, and make eaſy, the reſtraints and diſagreeable circumſtances that unavoidably attend our preſent ſituation.

"We hope you will mention us to the gentleman who is to ſucceed to the command in the Eaſtern Department.

"Wiſhing you all perſonal happineſs, I remain with reſpect, Sir, your moſt obedient and

Obliged humble ſervant,

HENRY HARNAGE.

The Hon. Maj. Gen. HEATH."

29th.—A Spaniſh xebeck and a French cutter arrived at Boſton, with diſpatches from their reſpective Courts, which were forwarded to Congreſs.

30th.—Certain intelligence was received, that the Britiſh had left Philadelphia.

July 9th.—Intelligence was received, that a warm action happened on the 28th ult. between Gen. Waſhington's and Gen. Clinton's armies, near Monmouth court-houſe, in the Jerſies. Gen. Clinton, having taken the reſolution to move from Philadelphia to New-York, through the Jerſies, commenced his movements accordingly, encumbered with an immenſe train of ſtores and baggage, which occupied ſome miles in length; and theſe are the greateſt incumbrance to a General, on a march of danger from

an attack of his opponent, to which he can be expoſed.

Gen. Waſhington was no ſooner appriſed of this intention and movement of the Britiſh General, than he made his arrangements accordingly, croſſed the Delaware, and puſhed detached corps forward to obſtruct the advance, gall the flanks, and fall on the rear of the enemy, while he moved on with the body of his army. By the 27th, Gen. Clinton had got on as far as Monmouth, and Gen. Waſhington's detached troops were on his flanks, and cloſe on his rear. Here the Britiſh General took a wiſe reſolution, to make a ſtand with a part of his beſt troops, while he puſhed on his baggage through the difficult defiles, under the careful and experienced hand of Gen. Kniphauſen.

Gen. Waſhington, acting with equal ſkill, and equal bravery, made every arrangement which the moment called for. On the morning of the 28th, he ordered Maj. Gen. Lee to attack the enemy's rear, himſelf moving on briſkly to ſupport him; but to his ſurpriſe, as he advanced on, he met Lee's troops retreating and the enemy impetuouſly purſuing. Here was Gen. Waſhington ſeen in all his ſplendor; for this critical ſituation is the orb in which he ſhines the brighteſt. He rallied the retreating troops: he inſpired them by precept and by example; and the misfortune of the morning was conſiderably retrieved.

The Americans fought bravely, and ſo did the Britiſh. After hard fighting, in a moſt intenſe hot day, when ſcores died of the heat, and drinking too freely of cold water when they could find it, both armies remained on the ground. The Americans determined to re-commence the action early on the next morning; but Gen. Clinton, finding that his baggage had ſtruggled pretty well through the defiles,

files, and had got tolerably well advanced, took the advantage of the cool of the night to ſlip off, unperceived by the Americans, and got to ground where he was ſafe. Some ſharp words took place between Gen. Waſhington and Maj. Gen. Lee, as the one advanced and the other retreated, which iſſued in the arreſt, trial and ſuſpenſion of the latter. Gen. Waſhington reported to Congreſs, that the Americans buried of the Britiſh 4 officers and 245 privates; among the former, the Hon. Col. Monckton, (who was a brave and experienced officer) and that there were a few priſoners. The American loſs; killed, 1 Lieutenant-Colonel, 1 Major, 3 Captains, 2 Lieutenants, 1 Serjeant, 52 rank and file—wounded, 2 Colonels, 8 Captains, 4 Firſt-Lieutenants, 2 Second-Lieutenants, 1 Enſign, 1 Adjutant, 8 Serjeants, 1 Drummer, 120 rank and file—miſſing, 5 Serjeants, 126 rank and file; of the artillery, one Firſt-Lieutenant, 7 Matroſſes, and 1 Bombadier were killed—one Captain, 1 Serjeant, 1 Corporal, 1 Gunner, and 10 Matroſſes wounded—one Matroſs miſſing—ſix horſes killed, and two wounded. Both Generals undoubtedly have much credit for their conduct in this action. Gen. Clinton's object being to reach New-York with his baggage, &c. obtained this victory, with the loſs which he ſuſtained. Gen. Waſhington's conduct was well calculated for victory on his ſide; and how far he would have ſucceeded, had it not been for the misfortune of the morning, none can tell. This misfortune began by expoſing the American advanced troops, in line, on the ſide of the field where they were cannonaded by the Britiſh, who at the ſame time wiſely expoſed only their artillery to that of the Americans. It is to be remembered, that men may be led on to action in the face of a cannonade, before which they will not *ſtand*; the point of deciſion is in the mind;

while

while advancing, although galled by the fire of their opponents, the dead and wounded are left behind them as they fall, and the troops feel an ardour for arriving in a few minutes at a point, where they can uſe their own arms, to retaliate for the injury they ſuſtain. But when men are placed open to the fire of the artillery of their enemy, at ſuch a diſtance as to prevent the uſe of their own arms in their defence, the dead and wounded fall and lie among them, or are drawn away, and every groan they make is heard. The troops ſoon conceive that they are placed as marks to be ſhot at; while the greater policy of the enemy keeps their column or line out of the rake of their cannon; the mind gives way, and retreat will be inevitable. This was experienced in this inſtance, and the faireſt hopes of a noble onſet in a few minutes blaſted; and theſe were ſome of the beſt troops in the army too. It was here that the firm Col. Weſſon had his back peeled of its muſcles, almoſt from ſhoulder to ſhoulder, by a cannon-ball. The confidence of the troops could not be fully recovered, until they ſaw the preſence of their beloved General.

18th.—Intelligence was received, that the Count D'Eſtaing had arrived, with the fleet under his command, off the Capes of Delaware. The fleet conſiſted of 12 ſail of the line, and 4 frigates. Off the coaſt of Virginia, they took a privateer, fitted out of New-York, of 26 guns—a ſhip, bound from New-Providence to London—re-captured a French ſnow, laden with dry goods, and drove a Britiſh ſhip of war on ſhore.

19th.—Intelligence was received, that about 2,000 men, ſaid to be invalids, had arrived at Rhode-Iſland from New-York.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received, that a body of refugees and Indians had deſtroyed the town of Wyoming,

oming, on the Suſquehannah, and butchered many of the inhabitants. The ſame day, it was learnt, that Gen. Waſhington had croſſed Hudſon's River with the main army, except Gen. Wayne's brigade—that Count D'Eſtaing had appeared off Sandy Hook—that the inhabitants of New-York were in great conſternation, and that the Marquis de la Fayette, with Glover's and Varnum's brigades, were on their march for Providence.

The Britiſh were very buſy in fortifying Rhode-Iſland.

25th and 26th.—Sent for Providence 43,000 flints, five tons hard bread, a quantity of dry fiſh, &c. and ſent a large number of the large flat-bottomed boats to Weymouth; they were to be conveyed, taking the advantage of the river, to the vicinity of Rhode-Iſland. Half of Col. Craft's regiment of State artillery were ordered to Tiverton; the other half of the regiment of artillery, and a draft from the militia, to the number of 3000 men, including 1000 before ordered, were to march and reinforce Maj. Gen. Sullivan in the State of Rhode-Iſland. On the 29th, at noon, the Count D'Eſtaing's ſquadron came to anchor off Point Judith, and at evening ſtretched a line from that Point to Secunnet.

31ſt.—The regiment of State artillery, with 6 braſs 4-pounders, and 2 braſs howitzers, marched for Tiverton; and the next day the marine mortar was ſent on, ſlung under two pair of ſtout cart-wheels. The Britiſh ſloop of war, Kingfiſher, a row-galley and a ſloop, ſtationed near Secunnet, upon the approach of a French frigate, were run on ſhore by their own crews, ſet on fire, and left to burn and blow up. Maj. Bumſtead's company of Boſton artillery, with two braſs field-pieces, and Lieut. Dunnel, with a detachment of the Continental artillery, with two field-pieces, marched for Rhode-Iſland,

Iſland, and the militia and volunteers were on their march that way; and large quantities of military ſtores and proviſions were going from hence.

Auguſt 10th.—Major-General Hancock, with his ſuit, went for Rhode-Iſland, to take the command of the militia. The ſame morning, Gen. Sullivan made a landing on the iſland, without oppoſition. About the ſame time, the Count D'Eſtaing, with his ſquadron, paſſed the Britiſh batteries at Newport, when there was a briſk cannonade on both ſides. Many of the ſhot ſtruck in the town, and the inhabitants were in much conſternation, not knowing in what place they were ſafe. A ſhot entered the door of the houſe of Mrs. Maſon, a widow lady, a little above the floor: as the family were paſſing from room to room, not knowing where the next ſhot might ſtrike, young Mr. Maſon, paſſing through the entry, found the black man of the family ſitting with his back againſt the ſhot-hole in the door; on being aſked why he ſat there, he anſwered, "Maſter, you never know two ſhot to go in the ſame place." Under this idea he was tranquil. Lord Howe's fleet appeared in the Offing, conſiſting of 8 ſail of the line, and 12 frigates.

11th.—The Count came to ſail, and ſtood out, and the Britiſh fleet ſtood off—the wind very freſh.

13th.—A moſt ſevere ſtorm of wind and rain, which ſtripped many trees of their fruit, and tore others up by the roots, &c.

The troops on Rhode-Iſland, under the command of Gen. Sullivan, were on the 11th, 10,122, including officers, excluſive of ſome volunteers from New-Hampſhire, and other corps, arranged as follows:

Varnum's brigade, including officers,	1,037
Glover's,	1,131
Cornell's,	1,719
Greene's,	

Greene's,	1,626
Lovell's,	1,158
Titcomb's	957
Livingſton's advance,	659
Weſt's reſerve,	1,025
Artillery,	810
Total,	10,122

Theſe were encamped at and near Quaker-Hill. The ſtorm deſtroyed a great number of cartridges, owing to the badneſs of the boxes. A freſh ſupply was ſent on from Boſton.

15th.—The army advanced, and in the afternoon arrived within two miles of the enemy, without the leaſt oppoſition. Gen. Waſhington with the main army, was at the White Plains, in the State of New-York, ſaid to be about 20,000 ſtrong. Seventeen tranſports with troops from Gen. Howe's army at New-York, ſailed for Rhode-Iſland; but finding the French ſquadron in the way, could not come to the place.

On the evening of the 16th, Gen. Sullivan took poſſeſſion of ſome high grounds which commanded the enemy's works on their right, and was not diſcovered until morning, when they began to cannonade the Americans, but did them no damage, which was continued the next day without injury.

On the night of the 17th, the covered way was nearly completed, and alſo two batteries of cannon. The enemy fired 300 or 400 ſhot, but did no other damage than ſlightly wounding two men.

19th.—The American works were advanced nearer to the enemy, and on the 20th, they had one man killed and two wounded by the enemy's cannon. In the afternoon the Count D'Eſtaing returned to Newport—his own ſhip, the Languedoc, was totally diſmaſted in the ſtorm, and loſt her rudder. In this ſituation,

ſituation, an Engliſh 50 gun ſhip of Lord Howe's ſquadron, came acroſs her, and got under her ſtern, where ſhe did the Languedoc ſome ſmall damage; but on wearing the Languedoc, ſo as to bring ſome of her heavy metal to bear, the Engliſhman bore away. The Marſeilles, a 74, loſt her foremaſt in the ſtorm, and the Ceſar, a 74, parted from the ſquadron.

22d.—In the afternoon, the Ceſar came to anchor in the light-houſe channel, (Boſton lower harbour.) After parting from the ſquadron in the ſtorm, ſhe fell in with a Britiſh 50 gun ſhip, with whom ſhe was engaged for near three glaſſes, and would have taken her, had not ſome other Engliſh ſhips hove in ſight. The Ceſar had 160 men killed and wounded, about 60 of which were of the former; and the Captain among the latter, who loſt an arm. On his being brought up to Boſton, our General immediately paid him a viſit, and expreſſed to him his regret for the arm he had loſt; to which the Captain replied, although very weak through the great loſs of blood he had ſuſtained—that he was ready to loſe his other arm in the cauſe of the Americans. Remember this, ye Americans, in future times!

The ſame day, the enemy threw 2 or 300 ſhells at our troops on Rhode-Iſland; two men only were wounded, and the fire briſkly returned. The Count D'Eſtaing determined to come round with his ſquadron to Boſton, and Gen. Sullivan muſt retreat to the north end of the iſland.

26th.—Maj. Gen. Hancock returned to Boſton. The volunteers were coming home.

On the morning of the 28th, the Count D'Eſtaing, with his ſquadron, arrived in Nantaſket Road, and the next day the Count came up to town.

On the 29th, there was a ſmart action between the Britiſh and Americans, towards the north end of Rhode-

Rhode-Iſland, which terminated in favour of the latter. The moſt ſevere part of this action was at the hollow between Butt's-Hill and Quaker-Hill, a ground ſituated for ſlaughter on both ſides, rather than for deciſive victory on either. Col. Jackſon's regiment of continental troops, and Gen. Lovell's brigade of militia, are ſaid to have diſtinguiſhed themſelves; and the artillery drove off two frigates that attempted to cover the enemy's flank. The Americans had about 60 men killed, and 180 wounded. The loſs of the enemy unknown.

On the evening of the 30th, Gen. Sullivan left the iſland; and on the morning of the 31ſt, an expreſs from Plymouth brought intelligence that 20 ſail of topſail veſſels were ſeen off that place the evening before—ſome of them very large ſhips. In conſequence of this intelligence, our General, the Preſident of the Council, Gen. Hancock, and others, went down the harbour, to confer with the Count D'Eſtaing.

The next day, *September* 1ſt, the Count came up to town, with a number of his officers, and was to dine with our General. Juſt as the company were going to ſit down, the ſignal guns announced the appearance of the fleet, and which were viſible from the town, (Mr. John Cutler having diſcovered them from the ſteeple of the Old South meeting-houſe) appearing to be about 20 ſail, eight of which at leaſt were two deckers. The Count immediately put off for the ſquadron. Several of the iſlands next to the road had been fortified, and the ſquadron moored, in order to give a warm reception to the Britiſh, ſhould they attempt to enter the road. A number of regiments of the militia of the vicinity, were ordered to march immediately to the Caſtle, Dorcheſter Heights, Boſton, Noddle's Iſland, &c. Several ſignal guns were heard in the bay the latter part of

the night, and the next morning the fleet was out of ſight. The militia which were coming in were countermanded. Admiral Byron's ſquadron arrived a few days before, at Sandy Hook. The enemy made a deſcent on New-Bedford, and did conſiderable damage: they alſo made a demand on the inhabitants of Martha's Vineyard, for a large number of cattle, ſheep, &c.

9th.—An affray happened in Boſton between ſome American and French ſailors; two French officers in attempting to part them, were much wounded—one of them, a Major of the fleet, died of the wounds on the 15th.

Brigadier-General Speckt, the eldeſt Brigadier of the Heſſian troops under the Convention, wrote a letter to our General, in which he informed him, that, being advanced in age, he had but little taſte for thoſe pleaſures and amuſements which pleaſe the young and gay; but he had not loſt his taſte for ſporting with his gun, and requeſted that he might do it within the limits of his parole. Nothing could be more pleaſing to our General, than to gratify this brave veteran ſoldier; he therefore wrote him the following anſwer.

HEAD-QUARTERS, BOSTON, *Sept. 10th*, 1778.

"SIR,

"YOUR letter of the 9th inſt. came ſafe to hand. The frequent informations which I have received of your civil and polite behaviour, ſince you have been at Cambridge, and your taſte for little diverſion except ſhooting, leads me to grant you every indulgence which is compatible with my duty, and the honour and ſafety of my country. You therefore have my permiſſion to go a ſhooting within the limits

its aſſigned you, attended by one ſervant; and hope the amuſement will equal your expectation.

I am, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

Brig. Gen. SPECKT."

17th.—The General Aſſembly ordered 1,200 men to be detached from the militia, and marched to Boſton immediately; and on the 19th, ordered one-third part of their train-band to be immediately detached for the purpoſe of completing the works in and about the town of Boſton—garriſoning the works, &c. Our General went on board the Count's ſhip, and with him to view the works on George's Iſland.

22d.—The Count D'Eſtaing, with the officers of his ſquadron, made a public appearance in town—were received by a Committee of both Houſes of the General Aſſembly, at their landing—breakfaſted at Gen. Hancock's—took punch and wine at Head-Quarters, at twelve o'clock; and then returned to the fleet, under a ſalute on leaving the town, and on paſſing the Caſtle.

The grand army under Gen. Waſhington took a new poſition; one diviſion under the immediate command of Gen. Putnam, at Fiſhkill; one under Gen. de Calb, at Frederickſburg; and one under Gen. Gates, at Danbury.

24th.—The General Aſſembly countermanded their orders for calling out one third part of their train-band, and ordered that they be held in readineſs to march on the ſhorteſt notice, wherever occaſion ſhall require.

25th.—The General Aſſembly made a public dinner for the Count D'Eſtaing, &c. &c. The next day, the Count D'Eſtaing, Marquis de la Fayette, and a number of other officers and gentlemen, dined with our General.

October

October 5th.—The Britiſh deſtroyed the ſalt-works and ſeveral ſtores, and did other damage, at Egg-Harbour; they alſo ſurpriſed a part of Polaſki's legion in that neighbourhood, whom they handled very ſeverely. The Britiſh pretended that they had heard that Polaſki had inſtructed his men not to give them quarter; they therefore anticipated retaliation. About the ſame time, Baylor's dragoons were ſurpriſed at Tappan, and treated much in the ſame manner. Nocturnal enterpriſes, in which the bayonet is principally made uſe of, are generally uncommonly bloody.

The Languedoc, the Count's ſhip, having been completely repaired, fell down to Nantaſket Road, and joined the ſquadron.

6th.—Gen. du Portail, the Chief Engineer of the American army, came to Boſton to ſurvey the ſeveral works, in order to their being repaired or augmented, as might appear neceſſary; and fatigue parties were employed on the different works, and every thing put in the beſt poſture of defence.

20th.—Our General, in company with the Count D'Eſtaing and others, went to Nantaſket, to take a view of the works there, and to review a battalion of marines, who manœuvred well, and in every particular were well diſciplined, owing to the unwearied attention of their Major, M'Donald, a Scotchman, whoſe father was in the rebellion in England, and with this ſon fled to France for ſafety. Gen. Bouganville had the command at Nantaſket; he was alſo commander of one of the firſt ſhips in the fleet under the Count D'Eſtaing. The enemy left the Jerſies, and prepared to embark a large body of troops. About 100 ſail of ſhipping, including men-of-war, fell down to the Hook on the 17th of October. On the 19th and 20th, the fleet ſailed from Sandy Hook; the firſt diviſion conſiſted of upwards of

of 120 ſail, of which 15 were of the line, and 10 or 12 frigates. This fleet went to the Weſt-Indies, with about 4,000 troops. The ſecond diviſion, about 30 ſail, of which 2 were of 50 guns, and 2 frigates. They ſtood to the eaſtward; there was but few troops on board the latter. Six brigades of the Continental army were on their march for Hartford, in Connecticut, to be ready to move this way, ſhould the enemy appear in this quarter; and Maj. Gen. Gates was ordered to take the command in the Eaſtern Department.

November 4th.—In the morning the Count D'Eſtaing's ſquadron ſailed from Nantaſket Road.

6th.—Maj. Gen. Gates, with his lady, ſuite, &c. arrived at Boſton. The Somerſet, Britiſh man-of-war, of 64 guns, run a-ſhore on Cape Cod, and was taken poſſeſſion of by the militia, who ſent the crew priſoners to Boſton.

7th.—Maj. Gen. Gates took the command at Boſton. In the next Continental Journal, printed by John Gill, the following made its appearance:

BOSTON, *Nov.* 12.

"ON Thurſday laſt, arrived in town, from Hartford, the Hon. Horatio Gates, Eſq. Major-General in the army of the United States, being appointed by Congreſs to the chief command in the Eaſtern Diſtrict, in the room of the Hon. Major-General Heath.

"While we receive, with the higheſt pleaſure, a General juſtly celebrated for his perſonal virtues and martial achievements, we cannot but pay a due tribute of reſpect to one, whoſe accompliſhments as a citizen, a gentleman, and an officer, have ſhone ſo conſpicuouſly in the delicacy, propriety, and dignity of his private and public conduct, through the whole of his command in this department.

"Tenacious

"Tenacious of the civil rights of the community, and of the honour and safety of these Free, Sovereign and Independent States, so far as they were entrusted to his protection, in the most interesting and critical circumstances in which a General could possibly be placed, he has uniformly exhibited a prudence, animation, decision and firmness, which have done him honour, and fully justified the confidence reposed in him.

"The cordial and most explicit approbation of the army, the inhabitants of this town, the army and navy of our illustrious ally, the Government of this State, his Excellency the Commander in Chief, and of Congress, added to the consciousness of his having discharged his trust with fidelity—must, in a great measure, have alleviated the fatigues incident to his arduous station, and compensated the loss of his health, so much impaired by an incessant attention to business.

"The very polite and affectionate terms in which he has taken leave of the department, in his last general orders, demand also our most grateful acknowledgments."

10th and 11th.—The Convention troops marched for Virginia. They were marched to Connecticut, and delivered to the orders of Gov. Trumbull; and were in like manner to be conveyed from State to State, each furnishing an escort, waggons, &c. until they reached Virginia. Gen. Sir Henry Clinton, having refused to give passports to American vessels to bring to Boston provisions for the use of the Convention troops, or otherwise supplying of them, Congress on the 15th of October, passed a resolve that the troops of the Convention should be removed to Charlotteville in Virginia, and they were now moving accordingly.

24th.

24th.—It was learnt, that the brigades which marched from the American grand army to Hartford, marched back to Danbury. In this month, Col. Alden, of one of the Maſſachuſetts regiments, with his clerk, were ſurpriſed and killed by the tories and Indians, at Cherry Valley, in the State of New-York. The regiment defended the place, and repulſed the enemy. The American army went into winter quarters in the Jerſies, at Danbury, Peek's Kill, &c. Capt. Hallet, on the 23d, on George's Bank, latitude 41 40 north, in 18 fathoms water, diſcovered a maſt 10 or 12 feet above water; upon a cloſe examination, ſuppoſed it to be the top-maſt of a 74 gun ſhip of Admiral Byron's ſquadron, which foundered in the ſtorm, when the Somerſet ran on ſhore.

December 19th.—It was learnt that the ſmall armed veſſels of the enemy did conſiderable damage to the inhabitants along the eaſtern coaſt of Maſſachuſetts, by plundering, taking their coaſting veſſels, &c. A little before this time, Colonel Joſeph Ward, Muſter-Maſter-General, and Lieut. Col. Bradford, were taken by a gang of refugees, in the Jerſies, and carried to New-York.

27th.—Our General received letters from Admiral Gambice, reſpecting the priſoners taken from the Somerſet man-of-war, and propoſing an immediate exchange; the letters couched in very polite terms.

28th.—A waggoner, his horſe and four oxen were found frozen to death near the dyke, on Boſton neck; they periſhed in the ſevere cold ſtorm on the preceding Saturday evening.

A more particular account from Cherry Valley ſtated, that there were 32 perſons killed, beſide Col. Alden, and 10 rank and file belonging to the Continental army, and about 30 other perſons taken priſoners; 32 houſes, 31 barns, one griſt-mill, fulling-mill, and blackſmith's ſhop, burnt. The enemy

conſiſted

conſiſted of 200 refugees, and 443 Indians, commanded by Joſeph Brandt, Walter Butler, and the Seneca Chief.

In the late ſtorm, the General Arnold privateer drove on ſhore near Plymouth, and bilged; 80 of the crew periſhed; the ſurvivors were much froſt bitten.

1779. *January* 6th.—The Marquis de la Fayette, and Captain Raimondis, of the Ceſar, French man-of-war, who was wounded and left at Boſton, ſailed for France in the Alliance frigate.

8th.—Capt. Mowatt, with his fleet of picaroons, were ſtill infeſting the eaſtern harbours; they had already captured about 60 ſail of veſſels, inward and outward bound, and burnt ſeveral houſes, &c.

Congreſs had paſſed a reſolution for calling in the whole emiſſion of Continental bills of May 20th, 1777, and April 11th, 1778, for which the poſſeſſors were to receive loan certificates, or new emiſſion bills.

21ſt.—It was learnt, that the enemy had made an irruption into the State of Georgia, and were in poſſeſſion of Sunbury. Their force, at firſt about 500, was ſaid to have increaſed to upwards of 1000.

The Britiſh ſhip which foundered on George's Bank, and whoſe maſts were diſcovered by Capt. Hallett, was ſuppoſed to be the Cornwall, of 74 guns. It is ſaid her whole crew were loſt.

February 3d.—It was learnt, that the Count D'Eſtaing, on his arrival in the Weſt-Indies, made an attack on the Britiſh in the iſland of St. Lucia, but was defeated with conſiderable loſs, after which he returned to Martinico.

9th.—It was learnt, that a number of Americans, confined in Goſport priſon, in England, among whom was Doctor Downer of Roxbury, made their eſcape in the preceding Sept. by ſapping with great addreſs

from

from the prison under the yard and fence, to the distance of 20 feet, daily concealing the earth which they dug, in the chimney of the prison. This Doctor Downer is the person mentioned to have killed a British soldier in single combat, on the 19th of April, in the battle of Lexington.

11th.—Intelligence was received, that the British troops had made themselves masters of Savannah in Georgia. Their light-infantry having stole a march upon the Americans, by a pass through a swamp, which was supposed impassable, and thereby defeated our army, under the command of General Robert Howe. The American loss was said to be about 30 officers, and near 400 men, killed, wounded and taken prisoners. This event threw the whole State of Georgia into the hands of the British. The American General was accused of misconduct, and a long time after brought to trial, and honourably acquitted. The British here practised art, and force was obliged to yield to it. Their light-infantry finding their way through the path in the swamp, bringing of them on the flank and in the rear of the Americans, where they were not expected, or not guarded against, proved their overthrow. A few shots on the flank or rear of an enemy, serves to disconcert them more than a heavy fire in the front. The point of decision here lies not in the force, but in the mind. A company of 50 men cannot fire more shots in the same given time on the flank, or in the rear, than they could in the front; but these few shots will have more effect on the minds of the enemy, than the fire of a whole regiment in their front. The Americans were vastly inferior in numbers to the British, and must at any rate have been forced from the ground; but the British light-infantry passing through the swamp, was the first misfortune.

The Continental currency was now greatly depreciated. Proviſions very ſcarce and dear, flour eſpecially ſo, and many families in Boſton almoſt deſtitute of this neceſſary article.

26th.—The following reſolution of Congreſs was publiſhed in the Boſton newſpapers:

In CONGRESS, *October 8th*, 1778.

"*Reſolved*, That all limitations of prices of gold or ſilver, be taken off."

27th.—It was learnt, that the Supreme Executive Council of the State of Pennſylvania had exhibited a number of charges againſt Maj. Gen. Arnold, while in command at Philadelphia.

March 7th.—Intelligence was received that Gen. Tryon had lately made an excurſion to Horſeneck, in Connecticut, where he burnt three ſmall veſſels, deſtroyed all the ſalt-works, and one ſtore; plundered the inhabitants of their cloathing, &c. and carried off about 200 cattle and horſes, and ſome ſmall ſtock. The party conſiſted of about 600 light-horſe, light-infantry, rangers, &c. The enemy got off with the loſs of 2 men killed and 20 made priſoners; giving out that their party was the advance of a body of 3 or 4000, they deceived the militia, and ſo eſcaped a ſevere drubbing.

11th.—It was learnt, that on the 25th ult. the Britiſh made an excurſion from Staten Iſland, with intent to ſurpriſe General Maxwell, who was ſtationed with his brigade at Elizabeth-Town, in the Jerſies. They landed at the point a little before day-break, and in ſuch ſuperior force as obliged the General to abandon the town, which he effected without loſs. The enemy burnt the General's quarters, the barns, and a ſtore or two, and then returned.

29th.—Intelligence was received, that General Waſhington had iſſued a proclamation, offering a pardon

pardon to all deſerters from the army of the United States, who ſhould return to their duty by the firſt day of May following; and alſo called upon all abſent officers to join their reſpective corps by that time.

Maj. Gen. Sullivan was ordered from Providence to the main army, and Maj. Gen. Gates to the command at Providence.

Capt. Mowatt again made his appearance on the eaſtern coaſt; he had landed ſome men, and burnt Mr. Shaw's houſe.

Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh had gained an advantage on the borders of Georgia, near Briar Creek. Col. Elbert, with a number of others, were taken priſoners. Matters did not wear a favourable aſpect in that quarter; but it was hoped that Gen. Lincoln, who had now got the command, would give a new complexion to things at the ſouthward.

April 2d.—Maj. Gen. Gates left Boſton for Providence; in conſequence of which, the command again devolved on our General.

11th.—It was learnt, that a fleet of refugee cruizers made an attempt to land a number of men near Falmouth, (Cape-Cod) but were repulſed by the militia. They next proceeded to Nantucket, where they plundered the inhabitants of goods and effects. Edward Winſlow, formerly of Marſhfield, was ſaid to be commander, with George Leonard, and others.

16th.—The Continental frigates, Warren, Ranger, and Queen of France, had been very ſucceſsful in a cruize, having taken ſeven or eight prizes going from New-York to Georgia: they were now coming in; among them the Jaſon, of 20 guns and 150 men; and Maria, of 16 guns—four field and about twenty commiſſioned officers, were on board. A large number of accoutrements for dragoons, dry

goods

goods to the amount of £100,000, and it was ſaid a ſum in ſpecie—a large quantity of flour, &c.

A great uneaſineſs prevailed in the army at Providence, on account of the ſcarcity of flour. Relief was ſent on.

May 3d.—Capt. Farnald, of New-Hampſhire, was unfortunately ſhot in the breaſt, as he was ſtanding on Hancock's wharf, by a muſket-ball diſcharged from the Warren frigate.

7th.—Intelligence was received that Col. Vanſcaak, of the New-York line, with about 500 men, had lately made an excurſion to Onondago, ſurpriſed the caſtle, killed 12 Indians, and took 34 priſoners; deſtroyed their caſtle, cattle, proviſions, &c. without the loſs of a man.

11th.—Several veſſels laden with rice, on account of the United States, arrived at Boſton, from the ſouthward, which was a great relief to the troops.

An embarkation of troops had ſailed from New-York, under the command of Gen. Matthews, convoyed by the ſhips under the command of Sir George Collier. They entered the Capes of Virginia, on the 8th. The 9th or 10th they took poſſeſſion of a fort at the entrance of Elizabeth River, on the weſt ſide. They deſtroyed a number of veſſels, ſtores, proviſions, &c. and returned.

30th.—Sir Henry Clinton moved up the Hudſon, with a large body of troops, covered by Sir George Collier's naval force, which had juſt returned from Virginia. The intention of Sir Henry Clinton was to ſeize the poſts at King's Ferry.

31ſt.—Gen. Vaughan, with the troops under his command, landed on the eaſt ſide of the river, a few miles below Verplanks; and Gen. Sir Henry Clinton on the weſt ſide, a little below Stoney-Point. They ſoon got poſſeſſion of both the points, and immediately rendered them more defenſible.

June

June 4th.—Our General received orders from Gen. Washington to join the main army. He had before ordered all the heavy cannon at Boston and Providence, belonging to the United States, to be sent on to Hudson's River; they were sent on, slung under two pair of stout cart-wheels each, and were a ponderous load.

Our General received polite and affectionate addresses, on his leaving the department, from the officers of the line—staff department—the officers of the Boston regiment of militia, &c.

On the 11th, he left Boston, accompanied by a large and respectable number of officers and citizens, in carriages and on horse-back, as far as Watertown, where the gentlemen had ordered an elegant dinner to be provided. After having dined, he took his leave, amidst a shout of hearty wishes for his health and prosperity.

14th.—He reached Springfield—was met some distance out of town, by Col. Armand's dragoons, and the officers of the Springfield department; and, on entering the town, was received by the infantry of the legion, and a salute of cannon from the park. Here he quitted the extent of his late eastern command. He was escorted out of town by the officers of the several military departments, and Armand's dragoons.

21st.—He arrived at New-Windsor; and on the 22d, attended Gen. Washington to West-Point.

23d.—Our General took the command of the troops on the east side of the Hudson, having in front all the out-posts towards New-York, on that side of the river. The British were now in possession of both the points at King's Ferry; and a number of transports had lain in the river for some time. The advanced posts of the Americans at this time, on this side, did not extend lower than Peek's Kill;

and

and a picket mounted every night at the ſouth foot of Sugar-Loaf Hill.

On the morning of the 24th, about 200 of the enemy's light-horſe came up as far as Crom-Pond—ſurpriſed two militia pickets—killed and took priſoners about 30 men. About 130 light-infantry of the enemy, at the ſame time, came out from Verplank's Point, made an excurſion round, and then returned.

On the morning of the 25th, the enemy's light-horſe, and about 1000 infantry, were at Pine's Bridge. Our General ordered 200 light-infantry, under the command of Lieut. Col. Groſvenor, to march to Robinſon's ſtores, near Marpoach-Pond, to cover that quarter.

27th.—A deſerter came in from Verplank's Point, who reported that the Britiſh army, except five or ſix regiments, were to leave the Points, and were then embarking. Soon after, upwards of 30 ſail of tranſports were ſeen, ſtanding down the river. The Britiſh had a ſloop at anchor off Peek's Kill landing, and a ſhip off the Dunderberg. Leſt the enemy meant a deception, the Americans were ordered to lie on their arms, and a regiment extra was ordered to advance on the heights.

28th.—Three deſerters, one a Heſſian muſician with his horn, came in from the enemy; they confirmed the teſtimony of the former deſerter, that the body of the Britiſh army had left the Points.

29th.—Moylan's horſe croſſed the river, to reinforce the left; they were to be followed by Armand's legion. At evening a deſerter came in from the enemy. A detachment from the Britiſh at Rhode-Iſland arrived at New-York.

Congreſs, by ballot, choſe our General a Commiſſioner of the Board of War; which was communicated

cated to him by a letter from his Excellency the Preſident, which he received on the 30th, as follows:

PHILADELPHIA, *June 24th*, 1779.

"SIR,

"I HAVE the pleaſure of tranſmitting to you, encloſed, an extract from the minutes of Congreſs, of the 22d ult. by which you will perceive that you are elected to the place of a Commiſſioner to the Board of War.

I have the honour to be, &c.

(Signed) JOHN JAY, Preſident.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

In CONGRESS, *May 22d*, 1779.

"Congreſs proceed to the election of a Commiſſioner for the Board of War, and the ballots being taken, Maj. Gen. W. Heath was elected."

Extract from the Minutes.

(Signed) C. THOMSON, Secretary.

Although this appointment was, in its nature, very honourable, with a ſalary proportionate, (4,000 dollars per annum) and our General was informed that he would alſo retain his rank in the army, he abſolutely declined an acceptance of it; expreſſing, in a letter to his Excellency the Preſident, the high ſenſe he entertained of the honour done him by the appointment; yet, that he choſe rather to participate in the more active operations of the field.

July 1ſt.—Gen. Huntington's brigade moved down, and took poſt at the gorge of the mountains, near the Continental Village. A deſerter came in from the enemy.

2d.—Col. Rufus Putnam reconnoitred the enemy's poſitions at Verplank's and Stoney Points. At evening a deſerter came in from the enemy.

About

About 360 of the enemy's light-horſe, and light-infantry, came out from Mile-Square, and attacked Col. Sheldon's light-horſe, who were poſted at Poundridge, about 90 in number. The ſuperior force of the enemy obliged our horſe, at firſt, to retreat; but, being reinforced by the militia, they, in turn, purſued the enemy. Our loſs was one Corporal, one Trumpeter, and eight privates, wounded: three Serjeants, one Corporal, and four privates miſſing; and 12 horſes miſſing. The ſtandard of the regiment being left in the houſe when the dragoons ſuddenly turned out, was loſt. Of the enemy, one was killed, four taken priſoners, four horſes taken, and one horſe killed. The enemy ſet fire to and burnt the meeting-houſe and Maj. Lockwood's houſe; they alſo burnt Mr. Hay's houſe, at Bedford.

The 5th was an exceſſive hot day, with a thunder ſhower; the lightning ſtruck in the encampment of Col. Putnam's regiment, on Conſtitution Iſland, by which one man was killed; ſeveral received much hurt, and a large number were ſtunned.

The enemy entered the Sound—landed, and took poſſeſſion of New-Haven—plundered and inſulted the inhabitants, and left the place.

7th.—The enemy landed at Fairfield, and burnt many houſes, &c.

10th.—About 6 o'clock, P. M. our General received orders from Gen. Waſhington, to march, with the two Connecticut brigades, by the way of Crom Pond, towards Bedford. The next morning, although rainy, the firſt brigade marched to the Village.

12th.—The ſtorm ceaſing, the tents (although as wet as water could make them) were ſtruck, and the troops took up their line of march, reaching Amiwalk about ſun-ſetting. A report having been ſpread in the fore part of the day, that the enemy were

were at or near Pine's Bridge, our General ordered the baggage-waggons, under proper escort, to file off to the left, and pursue a road running parallel with the one on which the column was moving, thereby keeping the column between the enemy and the waggons. Both arrived on the ground of encampment within a few minutes of each other. The troops lay on their arms, without pitching their tents. The enemy continued their depredations at the Sound, and burnt some houses at Norwalk.

13th.—At 5 o'clock, A. M. the troops took up their line of march, and reached Ridgefield, where they halted for the night. The next morning, our General sent off all the tents and other baggage to Danbury, and took up his line of march towards Stamford. When he ascended the high grounds in sight of the Sound, the enemy's fleet was observed under sail, standing off and on between Stamford and Long-Island. About 12 o'clock, two deserters from Gen. Clinton's army came to our troops; they had left the British army two or three hours before, at which time the enemy were on the point of making a movement; the corps of guides and pioneers being then assembled at Gen. Clinton's quarters. This called for the exercise of discretion. The troops on board the transports, with Gen. Tryon, if the whole should land, were far inferior to the force with our General; but the main British army, with General Clinton, was by far superior to his. If the whole of the Americans had marched down to Stamford, Clinton, by five or six hours forced marching, might have crossed his rear, and have cut him off from a communication with the Highlands; he therefore resolved to march forward to the Cross Roads, one of which went directly to the British army, another to Stamford, and in his rear to the Highlands. Here he took a position in order of

battle, and detached Col. Starr's and Meigs's regiments, with one field-piece, to Stamford, whose approach towards the town, in open view, would prevent Tryon from landing; or, in case he did with superior force, the detachment might be surrounded. In this situation the troops remained until dask, and then took a more advantageous position for the night, the whole lying on their arms, in order of battle. Early on the morning of the 15th, our General received information that the shipping had gone down towards New-York; he therefore moved and took a strong position, between Ridgefield and Bedford, sending out patroles of horse and foot, on all the roads. This movement towards the Sound, quieted the minds of the people, and saved Stamford and other towns from destruction.

While the attention of both the grand armies, and of the adjacent country, was turned towards the Sound, the Great WASHINGTON ordered General Wayne to strike at Stoney Point, with the light-infantry, which lay not far distant from that post. This was done with great promptitude, the works being carried by assault, and the whole garrison made prisoners of war, with all the artillery, ammunition, stores, &c. This was a most brilliant affair.

In advancing to the assault, the front of the American column led, with unloaded arms, relying solely on the use of the bayonet. As they approached the works, a soldier insisted on loading his piece—all was now a profound silence—the officer, commanding the platoon, ordered him to keep on; the soldier observed that he did not understand attacking with his piece unloaded; he was ordered not to stop, at his peril; he still persisted, and the officer instantly dispatched him. A circumstance like this, shocks the feelings; but it must be considered how fatal the consequence would have been, if one single gun had

had been fired; ſcores would have loſt their lives, and moſt probably defeat have been conſequent; and therefore this was the leſſer evil.

On the morning of the 16th, ſignal guns were heard in the Sound, towards New-York, at intervals, from two o'clock until day-light. Gen. Clinton's army moved to Mile-Square.

Stoney Point having been taken, with ſo much eclat to the American arms, Gen. Waſhington determined an attempt on Verplank's Point, on the eaſt ſide of the Hudſon and oppoſite to Stoney Point: for this purpoſe Maj. Gen. Howe, with two brigades and ſome 12-pounders on travelling carriages, was ordered to proceed by the way of Peek's Kill, throw a bridge over the creek, move on to the point, and open batteries againſt the enemy's works, while a cannonade and bombardment was kept up acroſs the river from Stoney Point.

17th.—At about 10 o'clock, A. M. our General, while out reconnoitring, received, by an expreſs from Gen. Waſhington, orders to move as expeditiouſly as poſſible to Peek's Kill, where he would find Gen. Howe with two brigades. Our General was to take the command of the whole, and carry into effect the orders which had been given to Gen. Howe. Our General returned immediately to the troops, and at 12 o'clock began his march towards Peek's Kill—marched until duſk 15 miles, when the troops halted and laid down to reſt on the ſide of the road; the dragoons not unſaddling their horſes. At 3 o'clock the next morning, the troops reſumed their march, and in the afternoon our General received information from Gen. Howe, by expreſs, that Gen. Clinton was on full march with his whole army towards Verplank's Point: an anſwer was returned, at what point the troops then were, and that they were marching as faſt as the men could endure,

endure, and would continue ſo until they reached him. When the troops had advanced a little to the weſtward of Drake's farm, Col. Moylan came up from Gen. Howe, with information that a part of Clinton's army were then above the New Bridge on Croten river, puſhing for the point; and that he was retreating from the point as faſt as poſſible. On this, our General ordered Gen. Huntington, with his brigade and two field-pieces, to puſh forward as faſt as the troops could march and keep in breath, and take a poſition on the high ground, to the ſouth of Peek's Kill, which commands the road to the point, and alſo that to the New Bridge, on Croten river; and ordered a regiment to file off to the right, and ſecure the paſs over the hills between Drake's and Peek's Kill, and alſo ordered the flank-guard on the left to be reinforced, and to ſend out ſmall flank-guards ſtill further from its flank. The troops moving on with the utmoſt expedition to the ground which Gen. Huntington had been ordered forward to ſecure. Every moment that paſſed, was expected to announce the commencement of an action between the advanced or flanking parties of the two armies, but it did not take place. At this moment, Gen. Waſhington, having learnt how matters ſtood, and that poſſibly Gen. Clinton might attempt to puſh into the Highlands, ſent an expreſs to our General, to move into the Highlands immediately, which was done juſt after dark, the troops paſſing the night on Bald Hill. It was generally the opinion, that if our General had not been at hand to advance in the manner he did, that Gen. Clinton, by a forced march of his light troops, backed by his army, would have got in the rear of Gen. Howe, before he could have poſſibly gained the road at Peek's Kill, and between his army and a ſally from the garriſon of Verplank's Point inevitably cut off the whole.

whole. Our troops at Stoney Point cannonaded and bombarded the enemy's works at Verplank's during the whole day, and until near midnight. The poſt was then evacuated, and the Waſhington galley was blown up.

19th.—The troops moved from Bald Hill, Parſons's brigade to Robinſon's, Huntington's and Patterſon's to Nelſon's, Nixon's to the gorge of the mountains.

On the morning of the 20th, the Britiſh army moved from their encampment, near the New Bridge, to Dobb's Ferry. The ſhipping in Tappan Bay came to ſail, and ſtood down the river. By a new diſpoſition of the American army, on this day, our General was to command the left wing; it then conſiſted of two regiments of horſe, and two diviſions of infantry.

22d.—Two deſerters came in from Verplank's Point; they reported that the garriſon conſiſted of about 1000 men. This day about 40 ſail of tranſports ſailed up the Sound. The Britiſh army encamped near Dobb's Ferry, their advanced picket at Jonathan Odle's, three miles below Tarrytown; from this encampment the enemy moved to Mile-Square, Volentine's Hill, &c. A deſerter from Verplank's Point reported that the Britiſh had again taken poſſeſſion of Stoney Point, and were repairing the works, their force on both ſides of the river being about 1500; and that they had got up the guns of our galley, which had been blown up.

25th.—The Britiſh having ſent Col. M'Lean, in the month of the preceding June, with ſix or ſeven hundred men, to eſtabliſh a poſt at the mouth of Penobſcot river, the Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts determined to diſlodge them, and made arrangements for the purpoſe. The armament, with the troops,

troops, made their appearance on this day before the posts; the issue is detailed in a subsequent page.

26th.—Four deserters came in from the enemy; they reported that Stoney Point was repairing with great expedition, and that Lord Cornwallis arrived at New-York on the 24th.

28th.—Four deserters came in from the enemy. Capt. Hopkins, of the dragoons, took the Captain of the Bellona transport, a Serjeant and Corporal of the 64th British regiment, and two seamen, who had ventured too far on the shore near *Sing-Sing*.

29th.—Two deserters came in from the enemy.

30th.—Three deserters came in from Verplank's Point. This morning, Capt. Hopkins, of Moylan's light dragoons, fell in with a party of the enemy, under Col. Emmerick, near Young's tavern, and charged them vigorously; but the Colonel being supported by the Hessian Yaugers, Capt. Hopkins was obliged to retreat: he brought off with him three prisoners and four horses, and killed six of the enemy on the spot, and wounded a number. Several prisoners which he had taken, were retaken by the enemy. Capt. Hopkins had one dragoon and two horses wounded. The British army were under marching orders for several days.

31st.—Three deserters came in from the enemy. A body of the enemy landed in the Jersies.

August 1st.—Capt. Hopkins gave notice that the British army had moved below Kingsbridge. Three deserters came in from the enemy.

2d.—Six deserters came in from the enemy. The British army encamped on York Island: Emmerick's and Bearmore's corps above Kingsbridge. The American army remained at their respective posts in the Highlands.

5th.—About 100 horse, of Shelden's, Moylan's, and of the militia, and about 40 infantry of Glover's brigade,

brigade, paſſed by Delancy's mills to the neighbourhood of Morriſania, where they took 12 or 14 priſoners, ſome ſtock, &c. The enemy collected—a ſkirmiſh enſued, in which the enemy had a number of men killed and wounded; our loſs, two killed, and two wounded. The Britiſh army, below the 7 mile ſtone on York Iſland, were alarmed by a report, that a French fleet were on the coaſt. Three deſerters from Verplank's Point; they reported, that the garriſon, except 400 men, were to remove to New-York.

9th.—Four deſerters from the point.

10th.—Two deſerters from the enemy. There were ſome deſertions from our army to the enemy.

14th.—Four priſoners, taken the 12th, near Sing-Sing, were ſent up, and two deſerters from the Britiſh 33d regiment came in.

17th.—Three deſerters from the enemy.

18th.—Seven deſerters came in; the enemy were very ſtrongly fortifying Laurel-Hill, on New-York Iſland, nearly oppoſite to Fort Waſhington.

19th.—23 waggon loads of forage were brought off from the vicinity of Peek's Kill, covered by 250 men, under the command of Lt. Col. Putnam. The galley and one of the enemy's gun-boats fired a number of cannon-ſhot at the party, but did them no harm. The night before, Maj. Lee, with about 400 men, ſurpriſed and took the garriſon at Paulus Hook.

20th.—Two deſerters came in from the enemy.

21ſt.—Two deſerters came in. At night, the enemy's guard-boats came as far up the river as Antony's Noſe, and fired ſeveral ſhot at the camp of our light-infantry.

23d.—Three deſerters came in from the enemy. The enemy burnt two houſes, belonging to the *Lents*, near Verplank's Point. Accounts were received, that

that Gen. Sullivan had advanced into the Indian country, and taken two of their principal villages.

25th.—Admiral Arbuthnot arrived at New-York, with about 200 ſail of tranſports: between 2 and 3,000 troops arrived in the fleets, and a large ſum of money was brought for the army. The continental frigates were very ſucceſsful at ſea, and ſent into Boſton ſeveral rich ſugar ſhips.

30th.—Three deſerters came in from Verplank's Point; and a priſoner belonging to the 33d regiment, taken by one of our patrolling parties, was ſent up. About 15 ſail of ſquare-rigged veſſels, lay at anchor near King's Ferry. 1231 recruits, of the 2,000, ordered by Maſſachuſetts, to ſerve 9 months, had already joined the army.

September 4th.—Three deſerters from the enemy.

5th.—Two deſerters came in. Preparations were making in New-York, for an embarkation of troops. The Britiſh army ſickly, eſpecially the newly arrived reinforcement.

6th.—The enemy made an excurſion from Kingſbridge, towards Horſeneck; on their return, they carried off ſome cattle, ſheep, poultry, &c. Accounts were received, that General Sullivan had obtained further advantages in the Indian country.

9th.—Two deſerters came in from the enemy. Putrid fever and ſcurvy raged at New-York, among the Britiſh troops. The American army remained in their former poſition: the Virginia line, near Ramapaugh, on the right; the light-infantry, near Fort Montgomery; the Maryland line, on the left of the light-infantry; Pennſylvania line, and two brigades of Maſſachuſetts, at Weſt-Point; North-Carolina brigade, at Conſtitution Iſland; the Connecticut line, on the eaſt ſide of the Hudſon, between Nelſon's and Robinſon's; Nixon's brigade, at the gorge of the mountains, above the Continental Village;

lage; Glover's brigade, Moylan's, Sheldon's, and Armand's horſe, at Lower Salem. On the weſt ſide of the Hudſon, beſides Fort Clinton, at Weſt-Point, and Fort Putnam, on the height back of it, there were ſeven or eight redoubts, built and building. On the eaſt ſide of the river, the north and middle redoubts, and a redoubt at the gorge of the mountains. Great expectations of the arrival of a French fleet on the American coaſt.

13th.—Four deſerters came in from the enemy.

14th.—Juſt after revelle, our General received orders to put Nixon's brigade under marching orders, which was done immediately. Gen. Howe was ordered to move with Glover's to Pine's Bridge, Croten River, and Nixon's to join him.

15th.—A deſerter came in from Verplank's Point. The day before, a party of the enemy's horſe came out from Kingſbridge, with intent to ſurpriſe Lieut. Col. White; but, by the deſertion of one of the party, they were diſappointed. The Count de la Luzerne, the new French Miniſter, arrived, and dined at Gen. Waſhington's.

16th.—Nixon's brigade marched to form a junction with Glover's, and a picket of 150 men mounted at the Village. Four deſerters came in from the enemy. The Count Luzerne was highly pleaſed with the treatment he received in paſſing through the New-England States. The 17th, he left headquarters, on his way to Philadelphia.

18th.—Gen. Howe was ordered to march back to Lower Salem, with Glover's and Nixon's brigades.

19th.—Two deſerters came in from the enemy. Some appearances indicated an evacuation of Verplank's Point.

22d.—A deſerter came in from Kingſbridge. Preparations for the embarkation of a large body of troops continued at New-York.

29th.—Two deſerters from the enemy, and one the day before.

30th.—The engineers, covered by a detachment of 300 men, reconnoitred the enemy's works at Verplank's; the enemy appeared to be much alarmed, and fired a number of cannon and ſmall-arms at our party, and a reinforcement came over from Soney Point. At evening another deſerter came in.

October 1ſt.—The American light-infantry moved down near to Kakeat, and the North-Carolina brigade from Conſtitution Iſland to New-Windſor. One deſerter from the enemy.

2d.—Two deſerters came in from the enemy. Certain intelligence was received, that the Count D'Eſtaing had arrived at Georgia. The enemy, at Verplank's Point, opened a number of *pits*, about five feet deep, and four feet over, with a ſharp ſtake in the middle, around the outſide of the abbatis. By the laſt accounts from Gen. Sullivan, he was at Tioga, on his return this way; he had deſtroyed a great number of Indian towns, and immenſe quantities of corn and other produce, and cut down many fruit-trees. It is a great pity the latter were not ſpared; they would have been very pleaſing to the American ſettlers, who will one day, not far diſtant, fill that fertile country.

A number of armed veſſels, from the Connecticut ports on the Sound, cut and brought off a number of the enemy's veſſels from Huntington harbour, Long-Iſland, and the Halifax brig was taken by an armed galley.

4th.—Five deſerters came in from the enemy. Gen. Howe was ordered to take poſt again at Pine's Bridge.

5th.—The Sieur Gerard, the late French Miniſter, came to camp, and dined at head-quarters. Two days before, Lieut. Gill, of the dragoons, patrolling

trolling in East-Chester, found a superior force in his rear, and no alternative but to surrender or cut his way through them; he chose the latter, and forced his way, when he found a body of infantry still behind the horse; these he also charged, and on his passing them, his horse was wounded and threw him, when he fell into the enemy's hands. Two of the Lieutenant's party, which consisted of 24, were killed, and one taken prisoner; the rest escaped safe to their regiments.

Congress about this time appointed the Hon. John Adams, a Plenipotentiary, *extra*, to repair to France, to negociate for a peace with Great-Britain, when an opportunity occurred. The British fortified Governor's Island, in the harbour of New-York, and appeared under great apprehensions of a visit from the French fleet under the Count D'Estaing. The troops and shipping at Rhode-Island were ordered to New-York.

7th.—One deserter from Verplank's Point. There was a cannonade between our infantry at Grassy Point and one of the enemy's guard-ships, when the latter was driven from her moorings.

8th.—The light-infantry of Glover's brigade crossed the Hudson to join Gen. Wayne. The British had a number of ships ready to sink in the channel, in case a French fleet arrived, and attempted to enter the harbour of New-York. The merchants in the city packing up their goods.

9th.—A fleet of transports passed the Sound towards Rhode-Island.

The General Officers of the American army resolved to address Congress, respecting themselves and the army.

11th.—There was a cannonade in the river between the American and British gun-boats; but no damage was done.

Sir

Sir Joſeph Yorke, the Britiſh Miniſter at the Hague, addreſſed their High Mightineſſes on the 22d of the preceding July, in ſuch language as evinced the feelings of the Britiſh nation. One deſerter from Verplank's Point.

12th.—Gen. Sir Henry Clinton and Col. Robinſon came up to Verplank's Point, in the ſhip Fanny, and returned the next day; after which, the workmen at the points ceaſed working. The troops of the enemy ſickly at the points.

13th.—Two deſerters came in.

14th.—Two priſoners of war were ſent up, and four deſerters came in. The Britiſh tranſports were collected near Turtle Bay, and their ſhips of war near the Narrows.

15th.—Seven deſerters came in from Verplank's Point; they reported that the enemy were putting their baggage, ſick, the women, &c. on board the tranſports.

16th.—14 priſoners, ſeamen, taken by Capt. Hallet's company of New-York militia, two days before, on the North River, near Teller's Point, were ſent up, and one deſerter came in. Juſt before ſun-ſet, a galley and ſeveral of the enemy's gun-boats came up the river as high as Fort Montgomery, and fired a number of ſhot at ſome of our boats, and at the troops on the weſt ſide of the river; the Americans diſcharged ſome muſkets from the banks at the boats, and the latter returned down the river.

17th.—One deſerter came in from the enemy.

19th.—One deſerter from Verplank's Point.

21ſt.—Three deſerters came in from Verplank's, and reported, that the enemy were on the point of evacuating their works. The officer commanding the advance picket, ſoon after ſent information that the works appeared to be on fire, and the ſhipping ſtanding down the river. Maj. Waldbridge, who commanded

commanded the advanced picket, immediately ſent a detachment to take poſſeſſion of the works. Several loaded ſhells left by the enemy, in places where the fire would come at them, burſt, but did no harm. The enemy left one horſe, a few old intrenching tools, and ſome other trifles at the point. The tranſports came to anchor off the mouth of Croten River; and information was received that the Britiſh grenadiers were on board tranſports, in the river near Fort Waſhington, and the 7th and 33d regiments in readineſs to embark at a moment's notice. Our General, leſt there might be an attempt made on Gen. Howe's diviſion, ordered a detachment of 500 men, and half the Village picket, under the command of Col. Bradley, to march, and take poſt, during the night, towards the New Bridge, on Croten River, to cover the right flank of Howe's diviſion.

22d.—About noon, the enemy's tranſports came to ſail with the ebb, and beat down againſt the wind, and were ſoon out of ſight.

24th.—Col. Bradley's detachment returned to camp. The Colonel reported that he obſerved large quantities of forage and fruit, in the fields between Verplank's Point and Croten River. To ſecure the forage, and cover the communication by King's Ferry, Gen. Waſhington ordered our General to move down and encamp at Peek's Kill.

27th.—The Connecticut line moved down and encamped on the high ground to the ſouthward of Peek's Kill, and Maj. Gen. Howe's diviſion was ordered up to form a junction. The day before, the enemy landed a body of troops, ſaid to be ſome thouſands ſtrong, at Amboy, and advanced towards Brunſwick. The light-infantry, and the Virginia line, were ordered to move down that way.

A man,

A man, who ſaid he was a Lieutenant in the Britiſh ſervice, and who produced a commiſſion, came out, pretending that he had been ill-treated, &c.

The State of Maſſachuſetts appeared to be determined to fill up their regiments, and offered 300 dollars bounty to thoſe who would enliſt, in addition to the Continental bounty, which was 200 dollars, making the whole bounty 500 dollars. This morning about 70 ſail of veſſels, many of them large ſhips, paſſed down the Sound, having the garriſon of Rhode-Iſland on board.

When the enemy landed yeſterday at South-Amboy, 96 horſe about the ſame time landed at Perth-Amboy, and proceeded rapidly to Middlebrook—burnt Rariton meeting-houſe, Somerſet court-houſe, and ſix boats, and returned through Spotſwood to South-Amboy. This party, on its retreat, was met by 13 of the militia, who fired upon them, killed one man and four horſes, and took the commanding officer, Lieut. Simcoe, and one trooper, priſoners. By the capture of Simcoe, the inhabitants were freed of a very enterpriſing and troubleſome officer. The deſtruction of the boats was the object of this enterpriſe.

29th.—Gen. Howe's diviſion formed a junction with the Connecticut line, and encamped with them. Strong fatigue parties were daily employed on the works evacuated by the enemy at Verplank's and Stoney Points. Gen. Lincoln and the Count D'Eſtaing, by the laſt accounts from Georgia, had formed a junction, and were determined to attack the enemy.

31ſt.—Maj. Bunſchoten arrived at camp, with a detachment of Lieut. Col. Paulding's New-York levies; they were ordered to garriſon Stoney Point.

November 1ſt.—Maj. Armſtrong, Aid-de-camp to Maj. Gen. Gates, called at camp, on his way to Congreſs,

Congreſs, with official diſpatches of the evacuation of Rhode-Iſland, which took place on the night of the 26th ult. The Britiſh left large quantities of forage, fuel, &c. Brigadier-General Stark had gone on to Rhode-Iſland. A Heſſian Lieutenant belonging to the Landgrave regiment, came out from the neighbourhood of Fort Waſhington; he pretended a deſire to enter the American ſervice as a volunteer. A priſoner of war was alſo ſent up from the advanced guard.

2d.—Intelligence was received, that a body of Indians were advancing towards Fort Schuyler.

7th.—Two German Yaugers, with their rifles, came to our camp. At night, Col. Armand proceeded with his corps from near Tarrytown to the vicinity of Morriſania, to the houſe of Alderman Leggit, where he ſurpriſed and took Maj. Bearmore and five others priſoners. The ſecrecy, precaution, gallantry and diſcipline exhibited by the Colonel and his corps on this occaſion did them much honour. In the capture of Maj. Bearmore, the inhabitants of the adjacent country were relieved from the frequent excurſions of a troubleſome officer. The Britiſh augmented their troops on Staten-Iſland.

11th.—Two deſerters came in from Col. Wurmb's Yaugers.

13th.—Five priſoners taken by Lieut. Oakley, near Morriſania, were ſent to camp. The enemy had a redoubt, called No. 8, on the eaſt ſide of Haarlem Creek, nearly oppoſite to the fort on Laurel Hill, and under the fire of its cannon, for the ſecurity of their advanced troops on the Morriſania ſide.

16th.—Intelligence was received, that on the 23d of September, Gen. Lincoln and the Count D'Eſtaing broke ground before the enemy's works, at Savannah in Georgia; and on the 5th of October, batteries

batteries of 33 cannon and nine mortars, were opened and continued firing with intervals, until the 8th, without the wiſhed for effect.

9th.—In the morning an aſſault was made, which proved unſucceſsful—the Americans were repulſed and obliged to retreat; of the Americans, 170 were killed and wounded; among the former, Count POLASKI, a remarkably brave and enterpriſing officer, of Poliſh deſcent. The Count D'Eſtaing was wounded in the arm and leg. It was ſaid, that of the French troops, 330 were killed and wounded. Gen. Lincoln retreated to Charleſton. It being rendered certain that the Count D'Eſtaing would not come to the northward, the American main army was diſtributed to winter-quarters.—Moylan's, Sheldon's, Baylor's, and Bedkins's dragoons to Connecticut—Poor's brigade to Danbury—The Maſſachuſetts line to Weſt-Point, and the poſts in the Highlands—The Virginia, Maryland, Pennſylvania, New-Jerſey, New-York, and Connecticut lines, Hand's and Stark's mixed corps, back of the Scotch Plains, New-Jerſey—Lee's corps, and a detachment of infantry, towards Monmouth—Marechauſee, with the main army.

19th.—Four priſoners were ſent up.

23d.—Maj. Gen. Gates and his family came to camp from Rhode-Iſland.

25th.—The troops were moving to their different places of cantonment; many of the ſoldiers, (as fine men as ever ſtood in ſhoes) were marched barefooted over the hard frozen ground, and with an aſtoniſhing patience. Remember theſe things, ye Americans, in future times!

28th.—The Commander in Chief gave our General the command of all the poſts and troops on Hudſon's River, which Gen. Waſhington very frequently called the key that locked the communication between the eaſtern and ſouthern States; and

of

of all the posts in the United States, was the most important. This was the second time that our General was designated to command them.

29th.—Three deserters came in from the galley in the river.

30th.—Early in the morning, Gen. Washington crossed the Hudson at King's-Ferry, into the Jersies. Maj. Gen. Gates was to proceed to Virginia—a serjeant, corporal, and three privates, were carried off by one Joseph M'Keel, a sly, artful fellow, in the service of the enemy, and who conducted many recruits from the country to them.

December 2d.—Col. Armand, with some of his corps, went down to Morristania, and took a Capt. Cruzer, of Bearmore's corps, and two men, prisoners. At this time the troops were greatly distressed for bread, and the horses for forage; the former occasioned by the want of water at the mills. All the horses, except such as were absolutely necessary for incumbent duties, were ordered out into the country. A man, who pretended to be a prophet, came out from the enemy—he more probably was a spy.

16th.—Col. Paulding's corps was ordered from Stoney Point to Poughkeepsie, a great desertion having taken place in the corps. The Virginia line had marched to the southward—the enemy at New-York, preparing for the embarkation of a large body of troops, said to be upwards of 10,000, under the immediate command of Gen. Sir Henry Clinton.

29th.—Three Hessian deserters came into our army; they reported that Gen. Matthews had the command of all the posts and troops on the north end of York Island, above the bridge, &c. The long talked of embarkation of troops at New-York, failed on the 26th. The fleet was said to consist of near 200 sail. The enemy boasted that it was convoyed by nearly 20 ships of war; however, it was

well known that they had very few ſhips of the line, and that they were under great apprehenſions of falling in with a ſuperior French force. They went to the ſouthward.

30th.—Lieut. Col. Newhall, with 250 men properly officered, marched to do duty on the lines.

31ſt.—There was a great body of ſnow on the ground.

1780. *January* 1ſt.—Early in the morning about 100 ſoldiers belonging to the Maſſachuſetts regiments, who had enliſted, at different periods ſubſequent to January, 1777, for three years, pretending that their time of ſervice now expired, (although many of them had months to ſerve, before their three years ſervice was completed) marched off with intent to go home: they were purſued and brought back: ſome of them were puniſhed; the greater part of them pardoned. Some others, at other poſts, conducted in the ſame manner, and were treated as the firſt mentioned. Thoſe whoſe time of ſervice was expired, were all diſcharged with honour.

3d.—The ſnow had got to be about four feet deep on a level, and the troops were driven to great difficulties in keeping open the communications to the poſts—obtaining proviſions, fuel, forage, &c. and ſo intenſe and ſteady was the weather, that for more than twenty days there could not be diſcovered the leaſt ſign of the remiſſion of the ſnow in any places the moſt open to the influences of the ſun. The Hudſon ſoon becoming paſſable on the ice, the troops were comfortably ſupplied with proviſions; but many were in extreme want of cloathing.

8th.—The light-infantry belonging to the regiments in the Highlands, were joining their reſpective corps; the corps of light-infantry being ſeparated for the winter.

9th.—About duſk, the north redoubt was diſcovered

ered to be on fire at the ſouthweſt corner, under the rampart, which was of timber; the fire was out of reach, and threatened the deſtruction of the whole redoubt. A detachment from Weſt-Point was ordered over to the aſſiſtance of the garriſon of the redoubt; but ſo ſtrongly dovetailed and ſtrapped were the timbers of the rampart, that the fire for a time ſeemed to baffle every exertion to extinguiſh it. The ammunition, and about 100 barrels of ſalted proviſions in the magazine, were ſeaſonably removed by the garriſon; but the fire was not extinguiſhed until about four o'clock on the morning of the 10th. All the officers and men diſtinguiſhed themſelves on this occaſion; but the conduct of Col. Lyman, Col. Sprout, and Capt. Drew, were conſpicuous indeed, as was that of a Serjeant of the garriſon of the redoubt, who, when all were on the point of quitting the redoubt, leſt the magazine ſhould take fire and blow up, inſtantly ruſhed into the magazine, and did not quit it until he had thrown out every caſk of powder, and box of ammunition depoſited in it. If his name could be recollected, it ſhould be inſerted.

12th.—Artificers and fatigue-men were ordered to repair the redoubt. The weather continued intenſely cold. A man belonging to the garriſon of Weſt-Point was frozen to death on his return from New-Windſor to the point; and many ſoldiers were froſt-bitten. Maj. Gen. Putnam, who had gone home on furlough about this time, received a paralytic ſtroke at Hartford in Connecticut, as he was on his return to the army.

17th.—The Hudſon was ſo frozen, that travellers ſafely croſſed the river on the ice at King's-Ferry. A Heſſian deſerter came in. Two days before, viz. on the 15th, Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling made a deſcent on Staten Iſland, with a detachment, conſiſting of about 2,500 infantry, and ſome artillery; a number of

of tents, arms, and ſome baggage, belonging to Col. Buſkirk's regiment, was taken and brought off, with ſome liquors, &c. Some of the American ſoldiers deſerted to the enemy, and 17 were taken priſoners.

19th.—Two deſerters came in from the enemy, and reported the ſtrength of the Britiſh at Fort Waſhington. The people croſſed from New-York to Long-Iſland on the ice. About this time, a detachment from Col. Mead's regiment of levies at Horſeneck, and a number of volunteers from Greenwich, the former under the command of Captain Keeler, the latter under the command of Captain Lockwood, the whole about 80, marched to Morriſſania; and about one o'clock in the morning, made an attack on Col. Hatfield. They firſt attacked the picket, killed 3, and drove the reſt into the Colonel's quarters. The Colonel and his men took to the chambers, and fired out at the windows, and down ſtairs at thoſe who had entered the houſe; it appearing difficult, if poſſible, to diſlodge them, the houſe was inſtantly ſet on fire, by putting a ſtraw bed into a cloſet, which compelled the enemy to jump out at the chamber windows, to avoid the flames. Colonel Hatfield, one Captain, one Lieutenant, one Quarter-Maſter, and 11 privates, were taken priſoners and brought off. This was a pretty affair, but was a little tarniſhed on the return by ſome of the militia, who were fatigued, loitering on the road where they ſuppoſed there was no danger; but a party of horſe purſuing, overtook, killed and captured ſeveral of them.

26th.—Between 11 and 12 o'clock at night, a fire broke out in the Quarter-Maſter's barrack at Weſt-Point, which threatened the moſt ſerious and extenſive damage. It had got to conſiderable height before it was diſcovered; the barrack was conſequently conſumed to aſhes, notwithſtanding every exertion

exertion of the garriſon, which was numerous. Brig. Gen. Patterſon, who commanded the garriſon, not only diſtinguiſhed himſelf, but alſo expoſed his perſon to the flames to ſave another building, which was fortunately effected. The loſs by the fire was conſiderable, both to the public and to individuals. The night before, viz. the 25th, a detachment of the enemy, ſaid to conſiſt of 500 men, made an excurſion from Staten Iſland, over the ice, to Elizabeth-Town, in the Jerſies, and completely ſurpriſed the picket poſted there, conſiſting of a Major and 100 men, properly officered; it was ſaid that not a gun was fired, nor a man hurt. The enemy ſurrounded the houſes, and took the troops aſleep.—He who ſuffers himſelf to be ſurpriſed, through the want of proper precaution, his character (ſays a great military writer) is irretrievable.

February 1ſt.—At two o'clock in the morning, the north redoubt was diſcovered to be on fire again in the top of the bomb-proof, between the ſally-port and the door. Every exertion was made by the garriſon of the redoubt, and detachments ſent to their aid, to put out the fire, but it was ſo much out of reach, and ſpread among the joints of the large timbers, that it was not extinguiſhed until about two o'clock on the morning of the 3d. The redoubt received conſiderable damage, and would have been totally deſtroyed, had it not been for the unwearied exertions of the troops, day and night, during the whole of the time; and much credit was due to Lieut. Col. Voſe, and the other officers who commanded. By a more accurate account of the loſs at the Quarter-Maſter's barrack at Weſt-Point, it appeared that 6 marques, 26 horſeman's tents, 80 common tents, 900 knapſacks, 250 narrow axes, and a number of other articles were burnt and deſtroyed.

On the morning of the 3d, about 9 o'clock, the enemy

enemy made an attack on Lieut. Col. Thomſon, who commanded the troops on the lines; the Colonel's force conſiſted of 250 men, in five companies, properly officered; they were inſtructed to move between Croten River and the White Plains, Hudſon's River and Bedford; never to remain long at any one place, that the enemy might not be able to learn their manner of doing duty, or form a plan for ſtriking them in any particular ſituation. The Colonel had for ſome days taken poſt himſelf at *Young's*, not far from the White Plains. Capt. Watſon, with his company, was with the Lieut. Colonel; Capt. Roberts and Capt. Stoddard, with their companies, were on the right; Capt. Lieut. Farley and Capt. Cooper on the left. The force of the enemy conſiſted of the four flank companies of the firſt and ſecond Britiſh regiments of guards—detachments from two Heſſian battalions—ſome mounted yaugers, and mounted refugees. The whole under the command of Col. Norton, of the guards. The roads were ſo filled with ſnow, that the enemy advanced but ſlowly, and were obliged to leave their field-pieces behind on the road. They were diſcovered at a diſtance by Mr. Campbell, one of our guides, who, from the goodneſs of his horſe, reconnoitred them pretty near. He gave the Lieutenant-Colonel notice of their advancing, and that their force was conſiderable, and adviſed him to take a ſtronger poſition a little in his rear. But the Lieutenant-Colonel was very confident that the enemy were only a body of horſe, and that he could eaſily diſperſe them, and would not quit his ground. The enemy firſt attacked a ſmall advance-guard, conſiſting of a Serjeant and 8 men, who behaved well, and meant to reach the main body in ſeaſon; but were prevented by the horſe, and all taken priſoners. The enemy's horſe ſoon appeared in ſight of the Americans, and diſcharged their rifles at long

ſhot,

ſhot, and waited the coming up of the infantry, when a warm action commenced; the enemy ſcattered, taking the advantage of the ground and trees in the orchard, and cloſing up on all ſides. The 3 companies of the detachment, which had joined, fought well. After about 15 minutes' ſharp conflict, our troops broke; ſome took into the houſe, and others made off; the enemy's horſe ruſhing on at the ſame inſtant, and the whole ſhouting. At this time, the two flank companies came up, but finding how matters ſtood, judged it beſt to retreat, Capt. Stodder's company giving a fire or two at long ſhot, Capt. Cooper's, from their diſtance, not firing at all. Some who were engaged effected their eſcape, others were overtaken by the horſe. The enemy collected what priſoners they could, ſet Mr. Young's houſe and buildings on fire, and returned. Of the Americans, 13 were killed dead on the ſpot, and Capt. Roberts, who was mortally wounded, lived but a few minutes. Seventeen others were wounded, ſeveral of whom died. Lieut. Col. Thomſon of Marſhall's, Capt. Watſon of Greaton's, Capt. Lieut. Farley of Weſſon's, Lieut. Burley of Tupper's, Lieut. Maynard of Greaton's, Enſign Fowler of Nixon's, Enſign Bradley of Bigelow's, with 89 others, were taken priſoners. The enemy left 3 men dead on the field, and a Captain of grenadiers was wounded in the hip, and a Lieutenant of infantry in the thigh. The Britiſh, in their account of the action, acknowledged that they had 5 men killed, and 18 wounded. Lieut. Col. Badlam, with the relief for the lines, was at the time of the action far advanced on his march, but not within reach of thoſe engaged.

One Mayhew, a pedler, well known in Maſſachuſetts, was of this detachment; he made off up the road, but finding the horſe ruſhing on, he ſtruck off into the ſnow, almoſt up to his hips. Two of the enemy's

enemy's horſe turned into his track after him; and, gaining faſt upon him, he aſked them if they would give him quarter; they replied, "Yes, you dog, we will quarter you." This was twice repeated; when Mayhew, finding them inflexible, determined to give them one ſhot before he was quartered; and, turning round, diſcharged his piece at the firſt horſeman, who cried out, "The raſcal has broke my leg;" when both of them turned their horſes round and went off, leaving Mayhew at liberty to tread back his path to the road, and come off.

7th.—A body of the enemy's horſe, ſaid to be about 300, and the 7th Britiſh regiment, came over from Long-Iſland to Weſt-Cheſter on the ice. The troops in New-York, about this time, drew four days' proviſions, which they were directed to keep cooked, and the troops to be in readineſs to move on the ſhorteſt notice, with arms and blankets only. A number of ſleighs were collected, and ſome heavy cannon were drawn out; whether an attempt on Morriſtown or the Highlands was the object, was not known. Several deſerters came in from the enemy, and in this month there were ſome deſertions from the American ſouthern regiments to the enemy. The enemy alſo made an excurſion in the Jerſies, as far as Elizabeth-Town, and carried off a great quantity of plunder.

19th.—Some ſmall parties of the enemy were out towards the White Plains.

Our General having obtained leave, from the Commander in Chief, to make a viſit to his friends in New-England, commenced his journey eaſtward, on the 21ſt of February, and reached his houſe in Roxbury on the 29th. It appeared that the winter had been as ſevere, and the ſnow as deep, in the New-England States, as in the Highlands of New-York.

March

March 8th.—Our General addreſſed the Hon. Council of Maſſachuſetts, on the importance of the then moment for recruiting their battalions.

By the maſter of a flag from Bermuda, information was received, that the fleet, in paſſing from New-York to the ſouthward, the preceding December, ſuffered conſiderably; and that an ordnance ſhip was loſt.

9th.—A privateer ſhip, of 18 guns, prize to the Tartar privateer, was ſent into Boſton.

13th.—The Committee of the General Court of Maſſachuſetts were iſſuing notes for the depreciation of the pay of the troops of their line: theſe were ſold at a very great diſcount.

20th.—A rich Jamaica ſhip, prize to the continental frigate Dean, arrived ſafe in Boſton harbour. The ſame day, there was a report that Sir Henry Clinton had arrived at South-Carolina, with the Britiſh troops, which ſailed from New-York in December.

The Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts paſſed a reſolution, granting a premium of £30 per man for each recruit that ſhould be enliſted and paſs muſter for their line.

27th.—A Marblehead privateer, the Aurora, ſent in a prize ſhip, with 1600 barrels of flour—1400 do. of beef and pork; and dry goods to the amount of £700 ſterling.

April 1ſt.—News was received of a moſt obſtinate engagement in Europe, between the French frigate, Sufveillant, Capt. Conedic, of 36 guns, and the Britiſh frigate, Quebec, Capt. Farmer, of the ſame force. The French frigate had 32 men killed, and 92 wounded. The Quebec blew up, and her whole crew, 300, except 40, were loſt, either in action or in the exploſion. This engagement did honour to the bravery of both nations.

The depreciation of the continental money rapidly increaſed; many people withheld their merchandize and produce from ſale, and the times were truly embarraſſing. An embarkation of ſome thouſands of Heſſian troops took place at New-York for Carolina. In the courſe of this month, the Maryland line of the army, and three companies of artillery, marched to the ſouthward.

26th.—News was received that the Britiſh had got their ſhipping over the bar, at Charleſton; that the continental frigates, in the harbour, were hauled up, and their guns taken out and mounted on batteries: the garriſon of Charleſton numerous.

27th.—The privateers Franklin and Jack ſent into Salem a large letter-of-marque ſhip, having on board 1,000 barrels of pork and beef, 750 barrels of flour, 800 firkins of butter, and dry goods to the amount of £15,000; ſhe was from London, bound to New-York.

During this month, the enemy made two excurſions to Paramus, where they killed and took a number of Americans; Maj. Byles, of the Pennſylvania line, was mortally wounded, and died the next day. The enemy burnt Mr. G. Hoper's houſes and mills; the militia turned out ſpiritedly, repulſed and purſued the enemy. By accounts from Europe, the American cauſe was viewed in a very favourable light, by the Courts in that part of the world.

28th.—The French frigate Hermeone, Capt. Latouch, arrived at Boſton; in whom came the Marquis de la Fayette, and ſuite, from France. The inhabitants of Boſton exhibited the greateſt demonſtrations of joy, on the occaſion. The next morning the Marquis, Capt. Latouch, and other officers, made a viſit to our General: the Marquis, the day before, on his landing at Hancock's Wharf, was received by a number of Continental officers, and eſcorted to his lodgings;

lodgings; after which, he paid his reſpects to the Honorable Legiſlature, who were then in ſeſſion; in the evening there were rejoicings.

May 2d.—The Marquis de la Fayette ſet out from Boſton, for the army.

During the ſeſſion of the Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts, they received an order from Congreſs, in favour of the State, for 2,000,000 dollars, to reimburſe the State in part of the expenſe of the Penobſcot expedition, which had greatly involved the State. The enemy having taken poſt at Penobſcot, the Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts, without applying to Congreſs, determined to diſlodge them; and, for this purpoſe, ordered a body of militia to be detached, under the command of Brig. Gen. Lovell; and, in addition to their own State veſſels, procured a number of privateers, belonging to individuals. The expedition was attempted; the ſhipping arrived ſafe in Penobſcot Bay; the troops, or a part of them, were debarked to attack the enemy, but they did not ſucceed in their attempt. The armed veſſels, inſtead of cruizing off the harbour, where they could have had ſea room, remained in the bay. The enemy ſent a naval force to the relief of the poſt, which arrived, and found the American ſhipping in the river, who immediately ran up as far as they could, where the whole were deſtroyed, and the militia and ſeamen left to find their way home through the woods. This was an unfortunate affair to Maſſachuſetts, whoſe privateers, before, were numerous, able and active, and greatly annoyed the enemy; and, had it not been for this blow, would have been of great public benefit, by depriving the enemy of many of their proviſion veſſels, and of increaſing proviſions in our own country. Congreſs, at firſt, ſeemed to decline bearing the expenſe, as they had never been

conſulted

conſulted reſpecting the expedition; but they finally conſented to a reimburſement.

Congreſs ordered, that 800 men, in the pay of the United States, ſhould cover and protect the Eaſtern Country the enſuing ſummer.

12th.—The gentlemen of Boſton gave a ball to the French and American officers.

14th.—The Hermeone frigate, Capt. Latouch, ſailed from Boſton harbour, on a cruize.

A number of very valuable prizes, taken by the American cruizers, were ſent into different ports.

The 19th exhibited a moſt extraordinary phenomenon. The wind, in the morning, was ſoutherly, a moderate breeze; the ſun ſhone a little after it was up, but was ſoon clouded: there was ſome thunder and moderate ſhowers. A little after 10 o'clock, the clouds exhibited a yellowiſh caſt, and every object ſeemed to preſent a braſſy hue; it ſoon after began to grow dark, which gradually increaſed; between eleven and twelve, it became neceſſary to light candles, to do houſehold buſineſs. The darkneſs increaſed until near one o'clock, P. M. the inhabitants dining by candle-light. About one, the darkneſs began to decreaſe, and went off gradually, as it came on; between three and four, P. M. the uſual light was reſtored. The evening, although the moon was at the full, was remarkably dark, and there was a ſprinkling of rain—the people were in great conſternation. This phenomenon, in the opinion of our General, although he has no pretenſions to aſtronomy, was produced by *oppoſite winds* forcing together a vaſt body of ſmoak and vapours, (the air had been ſmoaky for ſome days before) which, from the light ſtate of the atmoſphere, as they accumulated, aſcended, forming, from top to bottom, ſuch a body, as to cauſe the darkneſs; and yet, ſo open were the particles, as to admit the ſun's rays ſo far,

as

as to cauſe the braſſy appearance: had the atmoſphere been heavy, the vapours would probably have condenſed, and rain, in torrents, would have enſued. Some obſervations made by our General, ſome years ſince the foregoing, on the darkneſs in Canada, and which, on the afternoon of the preceding day, he noticed at Roxbury, and remarked thereon, afford ſtrong collateral evidence that the foregoing opinion was not wholly unfounded.

As the learned and curious wiſh to aſcertain, as far as poſſible, the true cauſe of the phenomenon, we throw in thoſe rough materials, which our obſervation, at the time, collected, that they may be ſhaped by thoſe of greater ſkill, for the information and ſatisfaction of an enlightened public. Thoſe called the dark days, in Canada, were the 9th, 15th and 16th of October, 1785; but the greateſt degree of darkneſs was on Sunday, the 16th, when the darkneſs was ſo great as to render the uſe of candles neceſſary in the churches and families: it is ſaid to have been as dark as a dark night.

On the 9th, at Roxbury, in Maſſachuſetts, the wind was at ſouth-eaſt, and then at ſouth-weſt; the day fair, cool and pleaſant.

The 15th, the prevailing wind was eaſterly; the day was cloudy and foggy; about 2 o'clock, P. M. it was uncommonly dark, and there was an oppoſite wind from the ſouth-weſt. There were ſeveral hard claps of thunder at a diſtance, and a few drops of rain. Towards evening, the ſun was viſible, but appeared very red, and the clouds exhibited a braſſy complexion, ſo ſimilar to the dark day in May, 1780, as to be noticed and compared; in the evening the wind was ſoutherly.

The 16th, which was the dark day in Canada, the wind, there at oppoſite points, N. E. and S. W. was at Roxbury S. W. The day was fair, warm and pleaſant;

pleaſant; from which it ſeems to be obvious, that the body of ſmoak and vapour, with which the atmoſphere was fraught on the 15th, which pervaded a region which comprehended Canada and a part of New-England at leaſt, was, by the ſtrength of the ſouth-weſt wind in the night, forced northward, and being ſtill oppoſed by the north-eaſt wind, preſſing on the other ſide, produced the accumulation of ſmoak and vapour which occaſioned the darkneſs; and if the north-eaſt wind had prevailed againſt the ſouth-weſt, the darkneſs would probably have been in New-England.

21ſt.—Capt. Latouch returned from his cruize; he ran into Penobſcot Bay, and caſt anchor, firing ſeveral ſignal guns. Two Britiſh ſloops of war, which were at anchor, upon the approach of the Hermeone, came to ſail, and ran up the river. Capt. Latouch lay at anchor until he took a plan of the enemy's poſt. Our General intended to have commenced his journey for the army on Monday, the 29th of May; but on the afternoon of the preceding day, he received a letter from Gen. Waſhington, dated the 15th, in which his Excellency obſerved, "I have the pleaſure to inform you, in ſtrict confidence, that we have authentic advices of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's determination to ſend a reſpectable armament of ſea and land forces to operate on the continent, and that the period is not remote when we may expect their arrival." The Commander in Chief added, that the ſeizing of Halifax was an object with the French; and our General was inſtructed to obtain, as ſoon as poſſible, the exact ſtate of the Britiſh in that quarter, as to their *works*, *garriſons* and *troops*; all of which was ſhortly after aſcertained.

29th.—The Hermeone fell down, in order to proceed on a cruize to the ſouthward. The troops

at

at Weſt-Point at this time were very ſhort of proviſions, and without rum.

Congreſs and the Commander in Chief called upon the ſeveral States to complete their battalions of the army with all poſſible diſpatch. The enemy at New-York were under great apprehenſions of a viſit from the French, and were ſaid to have prepared a number of hulks of different ſizes to ſink in the channel.

June 6th.—News was received, that a French fleet had been ſeen at ſea, in latitude 33, ſtanding E. N. E.

About this time, Capt. Latouch ſent into Dartmouth a prize brig, having 1700 firkins of butter, 150 boxes of candles, and 150 boxes of ſoap on board. The Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts ordered a draft to be made from the militia, to complete their Continental battalions. The drafts were to rendezvous at Springfield.

9th.—Our General received the following letter from the Commander in Chief.

HEAD-QUARTERS, MORRISTOWN, *June* 2, 1780.

"DEAR SIR,

"IT is expected that the fleet of our ally will, in the firſt inſtance, touch at Rhode-Iſland for the purpoſe of landing their ſick and ſupernumerary ſtores, and to meet the intelligence neceſſary to direct their operations. I have already ſent forward Doctor Craik, to take up proper houſes for hoſpitals, and to make ſome previous arrangements in that department: but I apprehend the French General and Admiral will, upon their arrival, want the advice and aſſiſtance of a perſon of diſcretion and judgment, and acquainted with the country. I muſt requeſt you to repair immediately to Providence, and, upon their arrival,

arrival, preſent yourſelf to them, letting them know that they may command your ſervices.

"I would wiſh you to endeavour, in conjunction with the Governor, to eſtabliſh a market between the fleet and army and country, and be careful that our allies are not impoſed upon in the prices of articles which they may find neceſſary. This is a point recommended in the plan drawn up by the Miniſtry of France, and which policy and generoſity directs ſhould be ſtrictly attended to.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Gen. HEATH."

About this time, an engagement happened between the Hermeone and a Britiſh man-of-war, which laſted near two glaſſes; it was a drawn battle. Capt. Latouch, and one of his Lieutenants, were wounded; and it was ſaid 13 men were killed and 39 wounded. Several of the wounded died ſoon after; among them, an officer.

15th.—At 11 o'clock, A. M. our General ſet out from his houſe, in Roxbury, for Providence, where he arrived the next day, at 2 o'clock, P. M. was met at Patucket Bridge by Deputy-Governor Bowen, and a number of other gentlemen, who attended him into town.

On Friday, the 2d of June, the Continental frigate, the Trumbull, James Nicholſon commander, had an engagement with a Britiſh frigate of 36 guns, which laſted five hours. The Trumbull had all her maſts wounded, 8 men killed, and 31 wounded. The Britiſh frigate was ſuppoſed to have ſuffered much.

In this month, a body of the enemy, under the command of Gen. Knyphauſen, landed in the Jerſies, and moved towards Springfield. Some ſkirmiſhing enſued; Col. Angel's regiment ſuffered conſiderably.

ſiderably. A number of men were killed on both ſides. It was now fully confirmed that the enemy's ſhipping paſſed Fort Moultrie, on Sullivan's Iſland, in South-Carolina, on the 9th of April, with a freſh breeze, by which means they received but little damage: they came to anchor between Fort Johnſon and Charleſton, and juſt out of reach of the latter. Gen. Sir Henry Clinton had now advanced his approaches ſo far, as to be erecting his batteries. The garriſon made a good defence, but, on the 12th of May, were obliged to ſurrender. Of the Americans, 1 Colonel, 1 Aid-de-camp, 6 Captains, 3 Lieutenants, 10 Serjeants, and 68 rank and file, were killed; 1 Major, 2 Captains, 5 Lieutenants, 18 Serjeants, and 114 rank and file were wounded. Maj. Gen. Lincoln, with Brigadiers Moultrie, M'Intoſh, Woodford, Scott, Duportail and Hogan, with 9 Colonels, 14 Lieut. Colonels, 15 Majors, 84 Captains and Capt. Lieutenants, 84 Lieutenants, 32 Second Lieutenants and Enſigns, 209 non-commiſſioned officers, 140 drums and fifes, and 1977 rank and file, including ſick and wounded, of the Continental troops, making in the whole, 2564, were taken priſoners. Beſides the foregoing, it was ſaid that there were about 500 naval officers and ſeamen, 250 Charleſton militia, and 500 country militia, alſo taken—the enemy pretended many more. About 20 American ſoldiers deſerted to the enemy, during the ſiege. Beſides the artillery and ſtores which fell into the hands of the enemy, (the former being 220 pieces, from 3 to 26 pounders) the Continental frigates, Providence, Boſton, Ranger, and Queen of France, with 4 State gallies, and one French ſhip of war, were loſt. It was ſuppoſed that about 500 American men, women and children, were killed, during the

the ſiege. The enemy's loſs, in killed and wounded, was conſiderable. The enemy broke ground before the town on the firſt of April, at the diſtance of 800 yards from the American works. Before the ſurrender of the place, it was contemplated in Council of War, to embark the garriſon, except about one regiment, on board the ſhipping, in the night, and run up the river, and land them; thereby to ſave the army, leaving thoſe in the town to make the beſt terms they could. This opinion for ſome time prevailed, but it was afterwards given up.

7th.—The Britiſh fleet left Charleſton, ſaid to conſiſt of 2 ſhips of the line, 2 fifties, 2 forty-gun-ſhips, 6 or 7 frigates, and between 80 and 90 tranſports; near 2,000 negroes were put on board the fleet. Lord Cornwallis, with about 2,000 men, marched from Charleſton towards North-Carolina. A few days after the ſurrender of Charleſton to the Britiſh troops, the grand arſenal, wherein was depoſited all the arms, &c. taken from the Americans, took fire and blew up, by which it was ſaid a number of men were killed and wounded. The loſs of Charleſton rouſed the country, and ſeemed to give a check to that ſpirit of avarice and ſpeculation which had but too much prevailed in all places, and a determination, by every exertion, to drive the enemy from the country, appeared to be catching from breaſt to breaſt.

At Rhode-Iſland, every preparation was making for the reception of the French fleet and army. The handſome college at Providence was given up for a hoſpital. The American privateers had been very ſucceſsful, and many valuable prizes were ſent in.

24th.—Monſieur Corney, a French Commiſſary, arrived at Providence. About this time, it was ſuſpected that the enemy at New-York had ſome intentions

tentions of an attempt on our posts in the Highlands; and some of their shipping were up the Hudson.

On the morning of the 30th, Capt. Latouch, in the Hermeone, sailed from Newport harbour. The same day, the British frigate, the Flora, which was sunk in Newport harbour nearly two years before, was weighed; she had a quantity of provisions on board.

July 1st.—News was received that the enemy were again in motion in the Jersies.

2d.—News was received of the sailing of the French fleet, which left France the 2d of May. It was said in France, that if the fleet fell to the northward, it would visit Halifax; if to the southward, it would proceed to Rhode-Island.

A great uneasiness, at this time, prevailed in Ireland.

4th.—The anniversary of American Independence was celebrated at Providence, by a discharge of 13 cannon from the park. Governor Greene, Monsieur de Corney, and a number of other gentlemen, dined with our General.

By the last accounts, the main army was at Ramapaugh, in the Jersies. In the skirmish, which happened some time before, near Springfield, the Americans had about 40 killed and wounded.

11th.—At one o'clock, A. M. our General received advice, by express, that the fleet of our illustrious ally was seen off Newport, the evening before. Before sun-rise an express was sent forward to Gen. Washington with the agreeable tidings, and our General immediately prepared to proceed to Newport, but the day being calm, the packet did not reach the town until 12 o'clock at night. General Rochambeau had gone on shore in the evening. Early the next morning our General went on shore, and waited on the Count; from which moment the warmest

friendship

friendſhip commenced between our General, the Count, and all the French officers. After breakfaſt, our General went on board the Duke de Burgoyne man-of-war, to pay his reſpects to the Chevalier de *Ternay*, who commanded the ſquadron, where the ſame friendſhip was commenced. The fleet conſiſted of ſeven ſail of the line, viz. the Duke de Burgoyne, of 80 guns; la Neptune, la Conquerant of 74; la Jazen, la Seville, la Ardent, and la Provence of 64; and the Fautaſque of 64, armed enflute with 40 guns as a hoſpital ſhip; two frigates, and two bombs, with a number of tranſports, having on board about 5,000 troops, beſides the marines, the ſoldiers, and ſailors, ſomething ſickly. The joy in the town of Newport was great. At 11 o'clock, A. M. the Admiral ſaluted the town with 13 cannon, which was returned by the diſcharge of the ſame number. In the evening the town was beautifully illuminated, and fireworks exhibited, to the great pleaſure and ſatisfaction of our allies. The fleet, on its paſſage to America, fell in with five Britiſh ſhips of the line, who, after firing a few broad-ſides, bore away.

12th.—Our General dined with the Count de Rochambeau.

13th.—The Chevalier de Ternay, and the principal officers of the ſquadron, came on ſhore.

14th.—Count de Rochambeau, and the General Officers of the French army, dined with our General.

15th.—A number of the Field-Officers of the French regiments, dined with our General in the moſt happy fraternity.

18th.—Four ſail of ſhips of war, two of them ſuppoſed to be of 40 or 50 guns, appeared in the offing; they were ſuppoſed to be Britiſh. The ſame day, the Chevalier de Ternay, and the principal officers of the fleet, dined with our General.

In

In the afternoon the remains of the officer, who was ſome time before wounded on board the Hermeone, and died of thoſe wounds, was interred with military honours.

The miſſing tranſport of the fleet, with troops on board, arrived ſafe in Boſton harbour, and the troops marched to Rhode-Iſland.

19th.—Our General dined with the Count.

20th.—The frigates of the ſquadron came to ſail in the morning; but the wind being a-head, they were obliged to come to anchor. Intelligence was received that Admiral Greaves, with five or ſix ſail of the line, arrived at Sandy-Hook on the 13th.

On the 21ſt, in the afternoon, 15 or 16 ſail of Britiſh ſhips of war appeared in the offing; more than one half of them were ſuppoſed to be ſhips of the line. At ſun-ſet, they appeared to be coming too under Block-Iſland. The frigates, which attempted to get out in the morning, returned at evening.

Apprehending that the Britiſh fleet might be cruizing off, with a view to intercept the ſecond diviſion of the French fleet, which was expected ſoon to arrive, our General ſent off expreſſes to head-quarters, Boſton and Hartford, adviſing of the Britiſh fleet being off Newport—that diſpatch-boats might be ſent out to apprize the French, and point them to another port. Several works and batteries, next to the harbour, were mantled with cannon.

22d.—The Britiſh fleet were cruizing off all the day, and rather nearer than they were the preceding day. Eighteen or nineteen ſail were counted, eight or nine of which appeared to be of the line. The French ſquadron kept their former ſtation, in the harbour, and in the moſt perfect readineſs for action. The army was in the ſame preparedneſs, and batteries ſo conſtructed as to afford a heavy croſs-fire with the ſhipping, in the entrance of the harbour.

bour. All veſſels and boats were forbid paſſing out of the harbour in the night.

23d.—The Britiſh were cruizing off—early in the morning one of their frigates was near in. Col. Greene's regiment of continental troops took poſt at Butt's Hill, Briſtol, and Howland's Ferries. Fifty French ſoldiers, from the army, were ſent on board each of the ſhips of the line. By accounts from Weſt-Point, it appeared that many recruits had joined, and were joining, the American army.

24th.—The Britiſh fleet continued off Newport. In the afternoon, 12 ſail were at anchor to the eaſt of Block-Iſland, and 4 frigates cruizing between that Iſland and Point Judith. In the evening, the Marquis de la Fayette came to town, from head-quarters.

25th.—Intelligence was received, that Sir Henry Clinton intended an attempt upon the French army, with 10,000 men; upon which 1500 of the militia of Rhode-Iſland, and Brigadier Godfrey's brigade of militia, of the county of Briſtol, in Maſſachuſetts, were called in to Tiverton; and the three months' men, who were deſtined to the main army, ſuch of them as belonged to the counties of Suffolk, Eſſex, Plymouth, Worceſter, Barnſtable and Briſtol, were ordered to march to Rhode-Iſland.

26th.—A confirmation of the intention of Sir Henry Clinton, againſt Newport, was received from the neighbourhood of New-York. In conſequence of which, the whole militia of the State of Rhode-Iſland was called in. Col. Tyler's, Col. Perry's, and Maj. Bullard's militia regiments, in addition to Brigadier Godfrey's, from Maſſachuſetts. Signals were fixed as far as Watch-Hill, and every thing put in train for the giving inſtant notice, both by day and night, in caſe the enemy ſhould approach towards the place.

27th.

27th.—The wind being freſh at ſouth-weſt, and the air hazy, the privateer ſhip Waſhington, Capt. Munroe, ran by the Britiſh fleet, and paſſed up the harbour. The ſtock on Conanicut-Iſland was ordered to be taken off. Howland's Ferry was to be well ſecured on both ſides.

30th.—Intelligence was received, that the enemy's ſhipping, which were in the Sound, and ſuppoſed to have taken in troops at Whiteſtone, had come to ſail, and ſtood to the weſtward; on which, the militia who were coming in, except the three months' men, were permitted to return home. The militia had diſcovered great zeal and alertneſs on the occaſion. About noon, the Britiſh ſhips that had been at anchor off Block-Iſland, came to ſail and ſtood out to ſea.

The ſame day a brig, with diſpatches from France, paſſed up the harbour; ſhe ran on one of the wrecks, and ſunk immediately.

31ſt.—Our General received letters from Gen. Waſhington, Gen. Howe, Gen. Parſons, and Gov. Trumbull, intimating that the enemy intended an attack on Newport; that about 150 ſail of veſſels were in the Sound; that about 8000 troops were to be employed on the expedition; and that Gen. Sir Henry Clinton was to command in perſon; that 26 heavy cannon, ſome mortars, &c. were put on board. In conſequence of this intelligence, the militia were again called in. The next day (Auguſt 1ſt) our General received the following letter from Gen. Waſhington.

ROBINSON'S HOUSE, *July* 31, 1780.

"DEAR SIR,

"I ARRIVED here laſt night; having met your favours of the 25th and 26th at Paramus, where the army then lay. Immediately upon hearing that the

tranſports,

tranſports, with the troops, which had been ſome days on board, had ſailed eaſtward, I put the army in motion again; they will croſs the ferry to day, and will be joined by the troops from hence. I propoſe moving as rapidly as poſſible down towards Kingſbridge, which will either oblige the enemy to abandon their project againſt Rhode-Iſland, or may afford us an opportunity of ſtriking them to advantage in this quarter, if Sir Henry Clinton has carried with him the number of men reported (eight thouſand) and with leſs than which, I think, he would ſcarcely riſk an attempt upon Count Rochambeau, reinforced by the militia.

"I entirely approve of the meaſures you have taken for calling in aid, and have the ſtrongeſt hopes that if Sir Henry ſhould venture upon an attack, that he will meet a reception very different from what he expects. You know the critical ſituation in which this army will be in a poſition below, and how much depends upon conſtant intelligence of the motions of the enemy. I ſhall direct relays of expreſſes the whole way, between this army and you, to convey intelligence in the moſt expeditious manner. The neareſt expreſs to you will be upon Tower-Hill; and Gen. Greene adviſes, that you ſhould keep two whale-boats, to communicate with him, by South-Ferry, ſo long as that paſſage ſhall be ſafe; and if that ſhould be interrupted, by Biſſell's Harbour.

(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

"P.S. I wiſh the Count de Rochambeau had taken a poſition on the main. G. W."

The militia came in with great ſpirit; they were formed into brigades, and every diſpoſition made for inſtant and vigorous defence, at every point where it was ſuppoſed an attempt might be made.

The

The batteries were ſtrengthened, a very ſtrong one erected on Roſe-Iſland, and redoubts on Coaſter's-Iſland: the ſtrong works on Butt's-Hill puſhed: avenues acroſs the fields, by the ſhorteſt routes, were opened, from the encampment of the French army, to thoſe points where their inſtant preſence was judged neceſſary; and ſuch marks fixed, at ſmall diſtances from each other, as to prevent any miſtake in the route, either by day or night; indeed, no one precaution was omitted, or probable advantage of ground or ſituation neglected. Had Sir Henry made the attempt which he menaced, he would undoubtedly have met a warm reception; but for ſome reaſon or other he gave up his deſign, and the militia were again ſent home. Perhaps on no occaſion did the militia diſcover more ardour, in preſſing to the field, or more regularity when there, than at that time, which was every where teſtified by the inhabitants.

Our General had expreſſed a wiſh to the Commander in Chief, to join the main army, that he might enjoy that command, to which he was at that time entitled, viz. the right wing; to which Gen. Waſhington, in a letter dated Auguſt 3d, replied:

"As to your coming on to the army immediately, I ſhall leave it entirely to yourſelf to act in the affair as you pleaſe. Your command is, and will always be ready for you; however, if you find your preſence where you are neceſſary, and that it will contribute to the accommodation of our allies, and to the cultivation of harmony, (matters about which I am very anxious) it may poſſibly be more eligible for you to remain longer, as we ſhall not probably have any inſtant active operations. But, as I have already ſaid, do in the matter as you like, and as circumſtances may decide."

And in a subsequent letter some days after, he observed: "As to your wishes to join the army, as I observed before, your aid may be very material to the Count; and as we have no prospect of immediate active operations, I would rather wish you to remain with him longer. I thought it essential in the first instance that there should be an officer of rank sent to him; and a variety of reasons concurred to induce me to believe that you would answer the important objects I had in view, as well at least as any I could choose. I have not been disappointed in the least in my expectation, and the Count himself judges your continuing very essential, and expressed himself in the following manner upon the subject several days ago. "*I shall keep with me, if you think proper, Gen. Heath, whose ardour, spirit, and activity, are absolutely necessary to me.*" For these several considerations, I wish you to reconcile yourself to remaining with him a while, which will be the more easy, when you consider that you will be fully advertised whenever we are in a situation to attempt any thing offensive on a great scale, and will have your command."

The British ship of war, the Galetea, appeared off Dartmouth. The British fleet went to Gardner's Bay, excepting the frigates, which cruized off. The troops continued fortifying the island.

15th.—The British fleet sailed from Gardner's Bay to the eastward. About this time, Maj. Gen. Greene resigned the Quarter-Master Generalship, and Col. Pickering was appointed to that office.

19th.—In the afternoon, the British again appeared off the harbour of Newport. A few days before, the Continental frigate Alliance arrived at Boston, in five weeks and four days from France, and brought news that there had been a great mob in England, headed by Lord George Gordon, and that the prisons, &c. had been pulled down.

23d.

23d.—The privateer ſhip Waſhington, Capt. Talbot, of 20 guns, came down the river, ſaluted the Commodore, and came to anchor.

24th.—The French army, joined by the Americans, fired ſalutes on account of its being St. Louis' day. The fleet fired on the next day.

The enemy were preparing for an embarkation of troops at New-York; their deſtination unknown.

The evening of the 20th, three or four of the enemy's cruizers were off the harbour.

26th.—The Britiſh fleet, to the number of more than 20 ſail, were in the Vineyard Sound.

29th.—A number of Indians from the northweſtern tribes came to Newport to pay their reſpects to the General of the army of their father the King of France. They had a hearty welcome, a treat, and preſents, and were much pleaſed. They were alſo invited by our General to a ſumptuous treat. After dinner, they performed their war dance before the officers of the armies, to the great ſatisfaction of thoſe of the French, who had not ſeen the like before. The next day, the French troops were under arms, manœuvred, and fired, in preſence of the Indians, who were much pleaſed.

31ſt.—Information was received that Admiral Arbuthnot was near the Vineyard with nine ſail of the line, eight other ſhips of war of different force, and two tenders; that he had made a demand of 11,000 lb. of beef and mutton, to be delivered every other day, at five pence per lb. The inhabitants remonſtrating againſt furniſhing ſo large a quantity, the Admiral aſſured them that in caſe they voluntarily delivered as much as their ability would allow, he would diſpenſe with what might be wanting.

The enemy continued their preparations for ſome grand enterpriſe, which could not be developed.

September

September 10th.—The Britiſh fleet were returned again to Gardner's Bay, and their old ſtation between Long-Iſland and Block Iſland.

11th.—Intelligence was received that on the 16th ult. Major-General Gates was totally defeated by the Britiſh, at or near Camden, in South-Carolina. The Maryland line ſuffered greatly, and Maj. Gen. Baron de Calb was wounded, of which wounds he died.

14th.—Intelligence was received, that Brig. Gen. Poor, of New-Hampſhire, died at camp on the 8th, of a putrid fever; and that Brig. Gen. Nixon had reſigned his commiſſion. Gen. Sir Henry Clinton was holding a body of troops, ſaid to be about 6,000, in readineſs to embark at New-York, ſaid to be deſtined to the ſouthward. The 17th, in the morning, the Continental regiment, commanded by Colonel Greene, croſſed over from the iſland to Greenwich, from whence they were to march to the main army.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received that Admiral Rodney arrived at Sandy Hook on the 13th, with ten ſail of the line, and two frigates—that on the 15th, Commodore Drake, with four ſail of the line, was detached from the Hook to join Admiral Arbuthnot near Gardner's Iſland, and that theſe four ſhips joined on the 18th. This junction was intended to intercept 12 ſail of French men-of-war, which were expected to be coming from the Weſt-Indies to Rhode-Iſland—that the 76th and 80th Britiſh regiments, one Heſſian regiment, the Queen's Rangers, Fanning's corps, a part of the horſe, and all the Britiſh grenadiers and light-infantry, were ordered to embark immediately at New-York—it was conjectured for Virginia. The diſpoſition of the Britiſh troops at that time was ſaid to be as follows: the 22d, 76th Britiſh, 3 Heſſian regiments, Robinſon's corps, and ſome artillery in the city—Highland emigrants,

emigrants, at Brooklyn—a few invalids at Newton—one regiment of Heſſians at Jamaica—the 37th, 38th and 43d Britiſh, one Heſſian regiment, one yauger, one grenadier, and one light-infantry from Jamaica to Fluſhing—about three regiments at Whiteſtone—Queen's Rangers, Oyſter Bay—Fanning's regiment, the 3d regiment of Delaney's, and the Jerſey volunteers, Lloyd's Neck—Col. Abercrombie, with about 600 infantry, at Huntington—the 17th dragoons at Smithtown—about 1500 men from Haarlem to Kingſbridge. At this time, the Count de Rochambeau and Admiral de Ternay had an interview with Gen. Waſhington, at Hartford.

22d.—Col. Greene's regiment was ordered to return from Greenwich to the iſland. The French army continued very buſy in fortifying Rhode-Iſland: ſome of their works were exceedingly ſtrong, and mounted with heavy metal.

24th.—In the evening, Gen. Rochambeau and the Admiral returned to Rhode-Iſland.

30th.—A French frigate arrived at Newport from the Weſt-Indies, but brought no news of conſequence. The Count de Guichen, inſtead of coming this way with the fleet from the Weſt-Indies, was going or gone for Europe.

While General Waſhington was in interview with General Rochambeau at Hartford, Maj. Gen. Arnold, who had the immediate command of Weſt-Point, was playing a moſt traiterous game with the Britiſh, for the delivery of that important poſt into their hands—which was communicated to our General by the Commander in Chief, in the following letter.

ROBINSON'S HOUSE, *Sept.* 26, 1780.

"DEAR SIR,

"IN the preſent ſituation of things, I think it neceſſary that you ſhould join the army; and requeſt that you

you will do it. You will come to head-quarters yourſelf. The route through Litchfield will be the moſt eligible for you, on account of ſecurity; and you may direct your baggage to halt at Fiſh-Kill, for your further orders. I write to the Count de Rochambeau by this conveyance; and I truſt that your coming away now, will not be attended with any material inconvenience to him.

"I cannot conclude, without informing you of an event which has happened here, which will ſtrike you with aſtoniſhment and indignation:—Maj. Gen. Arnold has gone to the enemy. He had had an interview with Major Andre, Adjutant-General of the Britiſh army, and had put into his poſſeſſion a ſtate of the army of the garriſon at this poſt, of the number of men conſidered as neceſſary for the defence of it; a return of the ordnance, and the diſpoſition of the artillery corps, in caſe of an alarm. By a moſt providential interpoſition, Major Andre was taken in returning to New-York, with all theſe papers in Gen. Arnold's hand-writing; who, hearing of the matter, kept it to himſelf, left his quarters immediately, under pretext of going over to Weſt Point, on Monday forenoon, about an hour before my arrival; then puſhed down the river in the barge, which was not diſcovered till I had returned from Weſt-Point in the afternoon, and when I received the firſt information of Mr. Andre's capture. Meaſures were inſtantly taken to apprehend him; but, before the officers ſent for the purpoſe could reach Verplank's Point, he had paſſed it with a flag, and got on board the Vulture ſhip of war, which lay a few miles below. He knew of my approach, and that I was viſiting, with the Marquis, the north and middle redoubts; and from this circumſtance, was ſo ſtraitened in point of time, that I believe he carried with him but very few, if any, material papers; though

though he has a very preciſe knowledge of the affairs of the poſt. The gentlemen of Gen. Arnold's family, I have the greateſt reaſon to believe, were not privy in the leaſt degree to the meaſure he was carrying on, or to his eſcape.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON."

Gen. Arnold's panic was ſo great, when he found that the plot was diſcovered, that he called out for a *horſe*, any horſe that firſt came to hand, if it were a waggon-horſe; upon the horſe's being brought, the General mounted, and, inſtead of paſſing to the landing by the uſual path, he rode down a ſteep bank, where it ſeemed impoſſible for a horſe with a rider to get down, without being unhorſed.

When Arnold had paſſed Verplank's Point, and had got under the guns of the Vulture, he told Corporal Larvey, who was Cockſwain of the barge, that he was going on board the ſhip, and that he ſhould not return; that if he (Larvey) would ſtay with him, he ſhould have a commiſſion in the Britiſh ſervice. To this, Larvey, who was a ſmart fellow, replied, that he would be d——d if he fought on both ſides; the General replied, that he would ſend him on ſhore. Arnold then told the barge crew, that if any or all of them would ſtay with him, they ſhould be treated well; but if they declined ſtaying, they ſhould be ſent on ſhore. One or two ſtaid, the reſt, with the Cockſwain, were ſent on ſhore in the ſhip's boat; the barge was kept. Larvey, for his fidelity, was made a Serjeant. He thought he had merited more; that he ought to have had as much as Arnold promiſed him. He continued uneaſy, until at his repeated requeſt he was allowed to leave the army.

Maj. Andre, on his return towards New-York, fell in with three young men below the lines, John Paulding, David Williams, and Iſaac Van Vert; they did

did not at firſt know that Andre was a Britiſh officer, and he was at a loſs whether they were Britiſh, refugees, or ſtaunch Americans. There was conſequently a little fineſſe exhibited on both ſides; but at length it was fully diſcovered who Andre was. He then attempted to bribe the young men, by offering them a large ſum of money; but their fidelity was too great to be purchaſed. They brought him up, and delivered him to the Americans, where he was tried, ſentenced, and hanged as a ſpy. The Britiſh General on the river endeavoured to ſave his life, firſt by threats, and then by perſuaſions; but all was in vain. Maj. Andre's behaviour, until the time of his execution, was becoming an officer and a gentleman; and ſuch, in his laſt moments, as drew tears from many eyes. But it muſt be remembered, that he who conſents to become a ſpy, when he ſets out, has by alluſion a halter put round his neck, and that by the uſage of armies, if he be taken, the other end of the halter is ſpeedily made faſt to a gallows.

Congreſs, pleaſed with the conduct of John Paulding, David Williams, and Iſaac Van Vert, paſſed a reſolution, on the 4th of October, directing that 200 dollars, in ſpecie, ſhould be annually paid to them, during life; and that a ſilver medal, deſcriptive of their fidelity, with the thanks of Congreſs, ſhould be preſented to each of them.

The ſituation of the Britiſh army, and other circumſtances, at the moment Andre was detected, were ſuch as render it highly probable, that if he had not been taken, the moſt ſerious conſequences to the American cauſe would very ſoon have taken place.

October 1ſt.—The next day after our General received the letter from Gen. Waſhington, he took a moſt affectionate leave of the French officers, and

left

left Newport, to prepare to go on to the army. His waggon-horſes were out in the country at a diſtance; theſe were to be brought in, ſhod, &c. and other preparations to be made, which prevented his leaving Providence until the afternoon of the 9th, when he was attended out of town by a number of officers and other gentlemen. Before he left Providence, he bid Count Rochambeau another farewel, by letter, to which an anſwer was forwarded on after him, as follows:

Newport, *Oct.* 12, 1780.

"My dear General,

"I HAVE received the letter that you honoured me with from Providence. I am extremely ſenſible of the marks of friendſhip that you give me, and likewiſe very grateful for all that your good heart has dictated to you upon the occaſion of our preſent ſeparation. I regret vaſtly your abſence, my dear General, as well as all the army; and I ſhall never forget the zeal, the activity, and the intelligence, with which you helped us in all our operations; and the French army will always be moſt grateful for it. I have the honour to be, with the moſt inviolable attachment, my dear General, your moſt obedient and humble ſervant,

(Signed) Le Count de Rochambeau."

16th.—Our General reached Weſt-Point, where he met the following letter from Gen. Waſhington.

Head-Quarters, near Passaick Falls, *Oct.* 14, 1780.

"Dear Sir,

"IN my letter of the 26th ult. by which I requeſted you to rejoin the army, I deſired that you would come yourſelf to head-quarters: I am now to requeſt that you will proceed to Weſt-Point, and take upon you the command of that poſt and its dependencies. Maj. Gen. Greene, who is at preſent

there, will either communicate to you himself, or leave with Gen. M'Dougal to be transferred, the instructions he received respecting the post; to which you will be pleased to attend. If this should not find you at West-Point, it is my wish that you should arrive there as soon as circumstances will possibly admit; and I hope there will be nothing to delay it.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON."

Our General had scarcely entered on the command, before he received intelligence that the enemy were making an incursion upon the northern frontier of New-York; upon which he immediately, without consulting the Commander in Chief, ordered Col. Ganse voort's regiment to their relief, and communicated what he had done to head-quarters; to which he received the following answer:

HEAD-QUARTERS, PREKANESS, 16*th Oct.* 1780.

"DEAR SIR,

"I AM favoured with your's of yesterday, accompanied by a letter from his Excellency Governor Clinton, who gives me an account of the incursion upon the frontiers. I am happy that you detached Ganse voort's regiment immediately; you will be pleased to order either Weisenfeld's or Willet's, as you may judge proper, to follow, and take orders from the Governor or the commanding officer. This is all the force I think we ought to detach from the posts, until the views of the enemy are more fully ascertained. They put off the long expected embarkation strangely. They had not sailed the 13th, and it was then said the expedition was delayed for some purpose. The number under orders, by estimate, are about 2,000, or something upwards. If the militia should not have been discharged, when this reaches you, you will be pleased to detain about

500,

500, to make up for the detachment you have ſent up the river. I have received your's of the 13th, as I have done that incloſing the eſtimates, for which I am much obliged. You will be pleaſed to carry into execution what you propoſed, reſpecting the poſts at Stoney and Verplank's Points.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON."

This was followed by another, dated the 18th, in which the Commander in Chief obſerved, "I am glad to find, by your letter of the 17th, that you were arrived at Weſt-Point, and had taken the command of that important poſt." This was occaſioned by our General's having been on the eaſt ſide of the river a day or two, until the quarters on the point were quitted by Maj. Gen. Greene, who was ordered to the ſouthward.

On the 17th, intelligence was received, that the enemy had advanced to Fort George and Fort Ann, both of which had fallen into their hands; that after deſtroying the works, and burning about thirty houſes, and as many barns, they had gone back; but it was apprehended that they would advance again.

19th.—Maj. Gen. Greene left Weſt-Point. The ſame day intelligence was received, that on the 16th the long talked of embarkation of troops ſailed from New-York, ſuppoſed to be deſtined to the ſouthward. The American troops at this time drove up the fat cattle which were near the lines, in conſequence of a warrant from Gov. Clinton.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received, that the enemy were meditating an excurſion as far up as Crompond and its vicinity, to ſweep off all the cattle. Our General immediately ordered Col. Hazen, with a detachment of 500 men, to move to Pine's Bridge, and Lieut. Col. Jameſon, with the 2d light dragoons, to move from Bedford towards Col. Hazen. The

detachment

detachment arrived at Pine's Bridge about 10 o'clock the ſame evening, and Col. Jameſon with the dragoons at about 2 o'clock the next morning. The evening of the 23d, Col. Hazen returned with the detachment; the enemy did not come out.

About this time, the enemy received a ſmall reinforcement at New-York, from England, ſaid to be 1,500 or 2,000. Two or three very valuable prizes, laden with rum, ſugar, &c. were ſent into Philadelphia, and news was received that upwards of 50 ſail of Britiſh Eaſt and Weſt Indiamen, outward bound, were taken by the combined fleets of France and Spain, near Cape Finiſter.

24th.—Intelligence was received, that the enemy had laid waſte a great part of the fertile country above Saratoga, and to the weſtward of Schenectady. The ſame night, 20 priſoners made their eſcape from the provoſt at Fiſh-Kill, by digging upwards of 20 feet under ground; parties were ſent out after them in different directions, and ſome of them were retaken.

26th.—News was received, that the militia, under Gen. Van Renſſelaer, obtained a conſiderable advantage over the enemy at the northward, on the 19th inſtant, at the Fox Mills. The action laſted for ſome hours; the enemy left their baggage, priſoners, &c. Col. Brown was killed in ſkirmiſhing with the enemy on the morning of the ſame day.

28th.—Official intelligence was received of a ſignal advantage gained by the Americans in North-Carolina over a corps of fourteen hundred men, Britiſh troops, and new levies, commanded by Col. Ferguſon. The militia of the neighbouring country under Colonels Williams and Shelby, and others having aſſembled to the number of 3,000, detached 1,600 men on horſeback, to fall in with Ferguſon's party on its march to Charlotte—they came up with them

them at a place called King's Mountain, advantageouſly poſted, and gave them a total defeat, in which Col. Ferguſon, with 150 of his men were killed, 800 made priſoners, and 1,500 ſtands of arms taken, with but inconſiderable loſs, except, and greatly to be regretted, the brave Col. Williams, who was ſuppoſed to be mortally wounded. A ſecond account ſtated the enemy's whole loſs in killed, wounded and priſoners, at 1,105; and that of the Americans in killed and wounded, 64.

29th.—Brig. Gen. James Clinton was ordered to Albany, to take the command in that quarter.

30th.—Capt. Johnſon, with a detachment conſiſting of 100 men, marched to do duty on the lines for the protection of the inhabitants againſt the enemy, and the cow-boys, (ſo called) a ſet of plundering thieves.

31ſt.—A ridiculous proclamation of the traitor Arnold, made its appearance; he ſtyled himſelf a Brigadier-General, and invited the officers and ſoldiers of the American army to join him, promiſing ample encouragement, &c. but it had no effect.

November 1ſt.—A ſevere ſtorm of ſnow and rain. The brave ſoldiers who were but illy clad, and deſtitute of blankets, were in a ſhivering condition.

The devaſtation committed by the enemy at the northward, was found to be very great; at leaſt 200 dwellings and 150,000 buſhels of wheat, with a proportion of other grain and forage, were ſuppoſed to have been deſtroyed; had not the purſuit after the enemy been very rapid, the devaſtations would have been much greater.

The American army were at this time experiencing a great want of flour, which they bore with their uſual patience.

4th.—Intelligence was received, that Maj. Carleton, after being reinforced with 500 men, was returning towards Skeenſborough; it was ſuppoſed that

that his force had increaſed to about 1,600, and further depredations on the frontiers were expected. The militia of the upper counties were again ordered out by Gov. Clinton.

The ſame day, the new arrangement of the army was publiſhed. The encouragement to both officers and ſoldiers was generous.

5th.—The troops were again without bread. Intelligence was received that the enemy had landed a body of troops at Portſmouth, in Virginia, and that another embarkation was talked of at New-York.

6th.—News was received from Boſton, that his Excellency John Hancock had been choſen Governor of the State of Maſſachuſetts—the firſt Governor under the new conſtitution. The ſame day, intelligence was received from the northward, that the enemy had croſſed Lake George the Thurſday before, and advanced to Fort Edward, the ſmall garriſon of which abandoned the fort on the approach of the enemy, whoſe numbers were ſaid to be about 800. The militia were out, and the 1ſt and 5th New-York regiments were ordered to embark and ſail for Albany immediately. They ſailed early on the morning of the 9th. On the ſame day, intelligence was received, that the enemy had lately made an excurſion to the upper parts of Connecticut river, and deſtroyed a number of houſes at Royalton. The militia turned out with ſpirit, repulſed and purſued them; the enemy made off with precipitation, leaving their plunder, &c. behind them. Upwards of 2,000 militia were aſſembled in that quarter.

The 2d regiment of dragoons moved from Bedford to North-Caſtle.

The enemy publiſhed ſeveral letters in the New-York papers, which were taken from the Fiſh-Kill poſt-rider not long before at Stratford; in particular,

lar, one from the general officers belonging to the New-England States to their ſeveral Legiſlatures.

A partial but not general exchange of priſoners took place about this time. Maj. Gen. Lincoln was exchanged for Maj. Gen. Phillips; General Thompſon, and a number of American officers, who had long been priſoners, were alſo exchanged.

14th.—The great chain, which was laid acroſs the Hudſon at Weſt-Point, was taken up for the winter; it was done under the direction of Colonel Govion, Capt. Buchanan, and Capt. Nevers, with a ſtrong detachment of the garriſon, and with ſkill and dexterity. This chain was as long as the width of the river between Weſt-Point and Conſtitution Iſland, where it was fixed to great blocks on each ſide, and under the fire of batteries on both ſides of the river. The links of this chain were probably 12 inches wide, and 18 inches long; the iron about 2 inches ſquare. This heavy chain was buoyed up by very large logs of perhaps 16 or more feet long, a little pointed at the ends, to leſſen their oppoſition to the force of the water on flood and ebb. The logs were placed at ſhort diſtances from each other, the chain carried over them, and made faſt to each by ſtaples, to prevent their ſhifting; and there were a number of anchors dropped at diſtances, with cables made faſt to the chain, to give it a greater ſtability. The ſhort bend of the river at this place was much in favour of the chain's proving effectual; for a veſſel, coming up the river with the faireſt wind and ſtrongeſt way, muſt loſe them on changing her courſe to turn the point; and before ſhe could get under any conſiderable way again, even if the wind was fair, ſhe would be on the chain, and at the ſame time under a heavy ſhower of ſhot and ſhells.

15th.

15th.—The 1ſt and 5th New-York regiments returned from Albany, the enemy having returned to Canada, except about 400 men, chiefly Britiſh, who were encamped about 10 miles below Crown-Point. Proviſions were extremely ſcarce at Albany.

The night of the 16th, a number of the boats were ſtove by the violence of the wind and ſtorm.

On the morning of the 18th, five large flat-bottomed boats, under the charge of a Subaltern and 25 picked watermen, were ſent down the river to the ſlote above Dobb's-Ferry, where they were to be placed on carriages, and tranſported to a certain place, for an enterprife which was meditating againſt the enemy.

19th.—Five companies, of 50 men each, marched from Weſt-Point, for the purpoſe of impreſſing teams in the upper part of Weſtcheſter, and lower parts of Dutcheſs Counties, preparatory to the grand forage.

The ſame day, the invalids of the Maſſachuſetts and Connecticut lines, and a detachment of able bodied men, the whole about 1000, arrived at Weſt-Point, from the main army.

20th.—Three light field-pieces, with four ammunition tumbrels, with ammunition for the artillery, and muſquet-cartridges; and alſo a quantity of hard bread, rum, &c. was ſent down to Peek's-Kill, for the uſe of the grand foragers.

21ſt.—The troops deſtined for the grand forage paraded between Nelſon's Point and the church. Juſt before they marched, Chevalier Chaſtellux, Major General in the French army, at Newport, and ſome other French officers, arrived; the detachment defiled before them, and proceeded for the lines. The French officers were much pleaſed with the appearance of the troops.

Gen. Chaſtellux then accompanied our General over to the Point, and on landing was ſaluted by the

diſcharge

diſcharge of 13 cannon; after dinner, he took a view of Forts Clinton, Putnam, Willis, &c. At evening Count Noailles, Count Damas, and Maj. Dupliſſis, arrived at the Point. The next morning, about 9 o'clock, Gen. Chaſtellux, and the other French officers, amidſt a ſevere cold ſtorm of rain, embarked on board the barge, and went down the river, to King's Ferry, on their way to head-quarters; on leaving Weſt-Point, they were again ſaluted by 13 cannon.

The evening of the 22d, Brig. Gen. Starks arrived at Wright's Mills, and the waggons were collected at North-Caſtle. This grand forage was to maſk an enterprize, which was to have been attempted by Gen. Waſhington, from the main army; although the foraging was in itſelf an important object. The enterprize, for ſome reaſons, was not attempted, but the grand forage was very ſucceſsful. Some of the light troops went as low down as Eaſt-Cheſter; and on the 27th, Gen. Starks returned with a large quantity of corn, ſome hay, cattle, &c.

The next day, the main army ſeparated to move into winter-quarters, and the light-infantry corps was broken up for the winter, and the men ordered to join their reſpective regiments. The corps of light-infanty was perhaps as fine a body of men as was ever formed. Major-General the Marquis de la Fayette had, with infinite pains and great expenſe, endeavoured to render them reſpectable in their appearance as well as diſcipline, in which he was nobly ſeconded by the officers: it was a pity that the operations of the campaign did not afford an opportunity for the Marquis to ſignalize himſelf with this corps.

30th.—The New-Jerſey brigade left Weſt-Point, proceeding down on the weſt ſide of the Hudſon, on their way to Pompton, where they took winter-quar-

ters. In the afternoon, the four Maſſachuſetts brigades arrived at Weſt-Point, and the two Connecticut brigades on the eaſt ſide of the river, where the whole took winter-quarters.

A few days before, viz. on the 23d, Maj. Talmadge, with a detachment from the 2d regiment of dragoons, conducted with great addreſs an enterprize againſt the enemy's Fort, St. George, on Long-Iſland. Fort St. George was ſtockaded, and encompaſſed a large ſpot of ground, a ſquare redoubt, with a ditch and abbatis. The enterprize ſucceeded completely. One half-pay Lieutenant-Colonel, 1 half-pay Captain, 1 Subaltern, and 50 rank and file, were made priſoners. The fort was deſtroyed and burnt. Two armed veſſels burnt, and a large magazine of hay, ſaid to be about 300 tons, was deſtroyed.

December 1ſt.—One of the largeſt ſcows at King's Ferry, in croſſing, with ſeveral baggage waggons on board, ſunk.

The ſame day, our General began to diſcharge the ſix-months men, beginning with thoſe who were the worſt cloathed and unfit for duty.

4th.—The three New-York regiments ſailed for Albany, where they were to take winter-quarters.

5th.—Marquis la Val, Count de Cuſtin, and Col. Fleury, of the French army at Newport, arrived at Weſt-Point, on a viſit.

6th.—At evening his Excellency Gen. Waſhington, arrived at New-Windſor, where he took winter-quarters. The ſame evening, accounts were received that there had been a terrible hurricane in the Weſt-Indies.

On the evening of the 9th, Gen. Varnum and Col. Pickering, arrived at Weſt-Point; at this time the troops were without bread, and very uneaſy. The next day, 300 barrels of flour arrived. A little before noon, Gen. Waſhington viſited Weſt-Point.

12th.

12th.—Intelligence was received from New-York, that another embarkation was to take place, and that Gen. Phillips and Gen. Arnold were to command. Major Talmadge received the thanks of Congreſs for his good conduct in taking Fort-St. George.

17th.—An expreſs from Major Maxwell on the lines, brought up intelligence that the enemy at Morriſſania, under Col. Delancy, were preparing for an enterprize. The Major was cautioned to be on his guard.

18th.—News was received that Monſieur de Sartine, the primate of France, had been removed—Mr. D'Caſtries appointed.

19th.—News was received that the Hon. Henry Laurens, who was ſent on a miſſion to Holland, had been taken by the Britiſh, carried into England, and cloſely confined. The Britiſh government talked of ſending to America a large reinforcement for the next campaign.

20th.—Further intelligence having been received that Col. Delancy intended to viſit our troops on the lines, in order to give him a proper reception, 150 men were ordered from the New-Hampſhire line, to march to Crom-Pond.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received that on the preceding Friday, the tranſports which had taken the troops on board at New-York, fell down to the watering place. They were to be convoyed by one 50 gun ſhip and two frigates.

On the night of the 9th, Major Hugerford, of Delancy's corps, ſurpriſed and took priſoners Lieut. Col. Wells, of a Connecticut State regiment, who was ſtationed near Horſeneck, with one Captain, two Lieutenants, two Enſigns, and upwards of twenty privates.

23d.—Intelligence was received that Monſieur, the Chevalier de Ternay, Admiral of the French ſquadron at Newport, had died there. The

The troops on the lines were reinforced with 50 men, and Lieut. Col. Hull was appointed to the command on the lines.

27th.—The Free and Accepted Masons of Washington Lodge celebrated the feast of St. John, at Starkean Hall, on West-Point.

30th.—Gen. Washington visited the Point, and, with a number of other officers, dined with our General.

On the 25th inst. Major Humphries, Aid-de-camp to the Commander in Chief, went towards New-York on an enterprize; he was attended by Capt. Welles, of the Connecticut line, Lieut. Hart, Ensign M'Calpin, Mr. Buchanan, Mr. M'Guyer, and twenty-four non-commissioned officers and privates, in one barge and two whale-boats. The wind was very fresh at north-west in the night, and the boats were forced past the city, and one of them almost down to Sandy-Hook—one of the boats put in at Staten Island: at length the three went round to Brunswick, from whence the Major and all the others, returned to the army on the 1st of January.

31st.—On the evening of the 29th, a party of the enemy from Delancy's corps, consisting of about 100 infantry and 50 horse, came up to North-Castle, where, after a short halt, they proceeded towards Bedford New Purchase. Capt. Pritchard, who was posted at Bedford with a company of continental troops, and some militia, immediately advanced towards them, attacked their van, who retreated, as did their main body. Capt. Pritchard pursued them as far as Young's. It was said that one of the enemy was killed and several wounded, who were carried off in a waggon. Four oxen and between 30 and 40 sheep were retaken—eight or ten head of cattle were driven off: the Captain sustained no injury.

This

This day the enemy were out again: Col. Hull immediately marched down with his whole force to meet them; by his vigilance they were prevented from doing any miſchief, and on his advance, retired towards the ſaw-pits.

1781. *January* 1ſt.—The Pennſylvania line mutinied almoſt to a man, ſeized the artillery, broke open the magazines of ammunition and proviſions, took out what they judged neceſſary, and took up their line of march. The officers exerted themſelves, both by threats and perſuaſion, to reduce them to order; but all was in vain. They were told that the enemy might take the advantage of their conduct, and come out—they anſwered, that if the enemy came out, they would immediately put themſelves under the command of their officers, and fight them; but that in any other caſe they would not be commanded. They took Gen. Wayne's horſes out of his ſtable, and put them to draw the field-pieces. At night they encamped, poſting out pickets, guards, and planting centinels in a very regular manner. An alarm was given to the country by firing the beacons, &c. and the militia were aſſembling. The reaſons given for the revolt, were the intolerable ſufferings of the army—the want of pay, of which 11 months was due—the want of cloathing, many of the troops being almoſt naked—the want of proviſions, and that many of them were held beyond the term of their enliſtment. They directed their march towards Philadelphia, determined to demand redreſs of their grievances of Congreſs.

7th.—Maj. Gen. Knox was ſent off by the Commander in Chief to the eaſtern States, to repreſent the alarming ſituation and ſufferings of the army.

8th.—Major Throop, with 100 men, was ſent towards Pompton, in the Jerſies, to cover the public

lic ſtores, at Ringwood. In the afternoon, 169 barrels of flour arrived at the Point.

11th.—His Excellency the Commander in Chief came down to Weſt-Point, when a Council of War was held at our General's quarters, in which all the General Officers on the ground, and all the Colonels and commanding officers of regiments ſat, to conſider what meaſures were neceſſary to be adopted, with reſpect to the Pennſylvania line. After the Council, by order of the Commander in Chief, our General iſſued orders for the forming of five battalions, by detachment from the ſeveral lines, to be held in the moſt perfect readineſs to march on the ſhorteſt notice, with four days proviſions cooked. The mutineers remained on the heights of Princetown, and two emiſſaries were ſent out to them from the enemy, with offers, in writing, promiſing to redreſs their grievances, by diſcharging them from their enliſtments, paying all their arrearages of pay and depreciation, and exempting them from ſerving in the Britiſh army, if they ſhould chooſe it. The mutineers nobly diſdained theſe offers, and gave up the emiſſaries and their papers: they were tried, and hanged as ſpies; the one was an inhabitant of New-Jerſey, the other was a Britiſh Serjeant. Gen. Sir Henry Clinton and Gen. Knyphauſen were ſaid to have been on Staten Iſland. The State appointed a Committee to inquire into the grounds of the complaints of the mutineers, and to redreſs ſuch as appeared to have foundation: this brought the buſineſs to a cloſe. A number of the ſoldiers were diſcharged, the reſt returned to their duty.

Accounts were received from the ſouthward, that the American army in that quarter were in a moſt miſerable condition, on account of cloathing and proviſions, and that their ſufferings were greater than thoſe experienced by the main army. Theſe ſuffer-

ings

ings of the army were rendered the keener, by the return of the officers and ſoldiers from furlough, who had been in the great ſea-port towns, where every neceſſary and luxury of life were enjoyed, in the greateſt abundance, many tables groaning under the preſſure of the dainties with which they were covered. Their liquors were not only the beſt, but alſo of great variety. Such reports to men, ſtanding centinel, as it were, in the jaws of death, ill clad, cold and hungry, with nothing but water oftentimes to drink, were trials almoſt too great for human nature to bear. The old Continental currency was fixed at 75 for one, at Philadelphia.

13th.—The Marquis de la Fayette and Count Deuxponts viſited Weſt-Point.

17th.—Intelligence was received, that the troops which ſome time before ſailed from New-York, were in the Cheſapeak, under the command of Gen. Arnold, and ſuppoſed to be on a plundering expedition.

The enemy at New-York removed the greater part of their ſhipping from the Eaſt River round into the North River.

18th.—Two hundred men, properly officered, marched down to the lines, under pretence of being a relief; 100 men of Hazen's regiment moved from Fiſhkill, to the village, and a detachment of artillery from Weſt-Point. Theſe were intended for an enterprize againſt the enemy.

19th.—150 men from the Connecticut line, and 200 from the New-Hampſhire line, were to move towards the lines; theſe, with thoſe who marched from Hazen's the day before, were to form a covering party to the detachment under Lieut. Col. Hull, who was to make an attempt on Delancy's corps.

21ſt.—A letter was received from Major Throop, at Ringwood, ſtating, that the evening before, the Jerſey line, at Pompton, had revolted, and it was ſuppoſed

poſed would be joined by the other part of the line, who were at Chatham. Their intentions had not been developed.

22d.—His Excellency Gen. Waſhington, the Marquis de la Fayette, and a number of French gentlemen, viſited the Point. The ſame day, 500 rank and file, properly officered from the Maſſachuſetts, Connecticut, and New-Hampſhire lines, were detached, and ordered to march the next day, under the command of Maj. Gen. Howe, to eſtabliſh order and diſcipline in the Jerſies.

23d.—The detachment marched from Weſt-Point for the Jerſies. The battalion from thence was commanded by Col. Sprout. The troops on the eaſt ſide of the river were to croſs, and join thoſe from the Point, at King's-Ferry: the detachment marched in high ſpirits.

24th.—In the morning, about ſun-riſe, a noiſe was heard in the air, reſembling the firing of platoons, and there were various conjectures reſpecting it. Intelligence was received, that Gen. Arnold had gone up James River, in Virginia, and had taken poſſeſſion of Williamſburg, and was moving towards Richmond; that he met with but little oppoſition, and would probably plunder large quantities of tobacco and other articles.

28th.—The detachment, under the command of Lieut. Col. Hull, returned from the enterprize againſt the enemy at Morriſſania. The addreſs and gallantry of the officers, the bravery and patience of the troops, exhibited on the occaſion, did them much honour. Beſides a number of the enemy who were killed, upwards of fifty were made priſoners; the Pontoon Bridge was cut away, the huts and forage were burnt, and a large number of cattle driven up. Of the detachment, one Enſign, one drummer, and ten rank and file, were killed; one Captain, one Serjeant,

Serjeant, and eleven rank and file wounded; ſix rank and file were miſſing.

31ſt.—Maj. Gen. Howe returned with the detachment from the Jerſies; order was eſtabliſhed among the troops in that quarter: two of the ring-leaders in the revolt were executed. It was learnt, that conſiderable damage was done to the enemy's ſhipping, at New-York, by the high guſts of wind, on the night of the 23d. It was alſo ſaid, that a Britiſh 74 gun ſhip was diſmaſted, off New-London; another ſtruck a reef, and a third went out to ſea with one of her maſts loſt.

February 12th.—The Duke de Lauzun, Count Pherſon and Col. Sheldon, of the French army, viſited Weſt-Point.

13th.—Intelligence was received, that on the 17th ultimo, an action happened near Pedee, in Carolina, between a body of the enemy, under Lieut. Col. Tarleton, and a body of about 800 Americans, under the command of Gen. Morgan: the enemy were totally routed, and purſued upwards of 20 miles. Of the enemy, 10 officers and 100 rank and file were killed, and 200 wounded; 29 officers and 500 rank and file were taken priſoners, with two field-pieces, 2 ſtandards, 800 muſkets, 35 waggons, 70 negroes, 100 dragoon-horſes, one travelling-forge, and all their muſic. The loſs of the Americans was not more than 12 killed, and 60 wounded.

14th.—Gen. Warner and Col. Aſhley, of Maſſachuſetts, arrived at Weſt-Point, to diſtribute to the ſoldiers of the Maſſachuſetts line, engaged to ſerve during the war, 24 dollars, in ſpecie, each, as a generous gratuity from the State. The moſt ſenſible ſoldiers did not applaud this meaſure, as it did not aſſure to them the full payment of the wages due to them, while this boon increaſed the burden of debt on the State.

16th.—Count de St. Maim, of the French army, viſited Weſt-Point. The ſame day, orders were iſſued for augmenting the light companies of all the regiments at Weſt-Point, and its dependencies, to 50 rank and file, each: they were to rendezvous, the 18th or 19th, at Peek's Kill.

17th.—The light companies were formed into battalions, in the following order: the eight eldeſt companies of the Maſſachuſetts line to form a battalion, under the command of Col. Voſe and Maj. Galvan; the two youngeſt companies of that line, and thoſe of Connecticut and Rhode-Iſland, to form a battalion, under the command of Col. Gamat and Maj. Throop; thoſe of the New-Hampſhire line, and Col. Hazen's regiment, and ſuch others as might be joined to them, to form a battalion. This appointment of officers, was declared to be intended not to affect the general plan of arranging the light-infantry for the campaign. The preceding morning, the enemy made an excurſion from Morriſſania, towards Bedford, took Lieuts. Carpenter, Wright and Peacock, and five other inhabitants, priſoners; burnt five houſes, plundered and ſtript ſeveral other inhabitants, and returned. They were purſued by Capt. Pritchard, but could not be overtaken.

18th.—The light companies were inſpected. It appeared that Admiral Arbuthnot's ſquadron were ſo much damaged, in the ſtorm, on the 23d ult. as to be rendered inferior to the French, in theſe ſeas.

20th.—A detachment of artillery was ordered from the park, to join the light-infantry; the whole were to be commanded by the Marquis de la Fayette, and were to march to the ſouthward. The ſame day, ſix of our guides, on a reconnoitring party, towards King's Bridge, fell in with a reconnoitring party of Delancy's corps: the guides attacked them, and took five priſoners, all of whom were wounded.

24th.

24th.—The detachment doing duty on the lines, was reduced to 50 rank and file, properly officered. Capt. Paul Jones, who arrived in the Ariel, at Philadelphia on the 17th, in eight weeks from L'Orient, brought a large quantity of powder.

28th.—Intelligence was received, that a conſiderable embarkation of troops was taking place at New-York—the inhabitants and army in ſome conſternation. It was ſaid that a fleet of French merchantmen had arrived in the Cheſapeak; but from appearances, there were good grounds to ſuſpect that there was ſomething more than merchant ſhips.

March 1ſt.—News was received, that a part of the French ſquadron, at Newport, had ſailed as far as the Cheſapeak, where they took the Romulus, of 50 guns, and nine privateers and tranſports; four of the latter they deſtroyed, not having ſpare men to navigate them; but the remainder, with the Romulus, had ſafely arrived at Rhode-Iſland.

On the morning of the 2d of March, Gen. Waſhington ſet out from New-Windſor, for Rhode-Iſland. By the laſt accounts from the ſouthward, Lord Cornwallis was advancing rapidly, and Gen. Greene retreating moderately. His Lordſhip had deſtroyed his waggons, and diſengaged himſelf of incumbrance as much as poſſible.

3d.—A Capt. Simmons, of Delancy's corps, was ſent up to Weſt-Point; he aſſerted to be diſaffected to the enemy on ſome pretences, and that he had reſigned his commiſſion, and deſerted from them: he was ſent to the Governor of the State.

5th.—Three priſoners were ſent up; they were taken by a party of our guides, within a ſmall diſtance of the enemy's poſt, No. 8, near Morriſſania.

6th and 7th.—Col. Vanſcaak's regiment of the New-York line arrived at Weſt-Point, from Albany. The troops were at this time well ſupplied with

proviſions,

proviſions, but almoſt totally deſtitute of forage, and ſubjected to great fatigue in obtaining fuel, which part of the troops were obliged to bring on their backs, nearly a mile.

9th.—Intelligence was received, that the laſt embarkation of Britiſh troops ſailed from New-York the preceding Wedneſday, ſaid to be ſix regiments, making about 3,000 men in the whole. The ſouthern militia had been ſucceſsful againſt the Cherokee Indians, and deſtroyed a number of their towns. The laſt advices from the ſouthward ſtated, that Lord Cornwallis had continued to puſh rapidly after Gen. Greene, who had croſſed Dan River, and his Lordſhip had come up to it, and then began to retreat; on which Gen. Greene re-croſſed the Dan, in order to purſue him, and that the militia were collecting. Gen. Arnold kept cloſe at Portſmouth; Gen. Mecklenburgh was near him, with a ſuperior force, and the Marquis de la Fayette was as far as Elk on the 3d, with the light-infantry.

11th.—A detachment of recruits from Maſſachuſetts arrived. The ſame day, Capt. Pray was ordered to take command of the Block-Houſe, at Dobb's Ferry, the water-guards, &c.

On the firſt of this month, the Confederation and perpetual Union of the Thirteen American States, from New-Hampſhire to Georgia, incluſive, was ſigned and ratified by all the Delegates in Congreſs.

On the evening of the 12th, intelligence was received from Capt. Pray, that at about two o'clock in the morning, he was alarmed by the firing of guns, blowing of horns, &c.—that the enemy were out on both ſides of the river. In conſequence of this, an expreſs was ſent off to Maj. Maxwell, to be on his guard; and a detachment of 150 men was ordered to be in readineſs to march early the next morning, if it ſhould be neceſſary to cover him.

13th.

13th.—The intelligence of the enemy being out on both ſides of the river, was confirmed; as to the weſt ſide of the river, the enemy came out from Paulus-Hook about 200 ſtrong, with two field-pieces, and had advanced within about three miles of the Block-Houſe, at Dobb's Ferry. About noon, a detachment of 150 men, under the command of Maj. Graham, with one field-piece, embarked on board a ſloop, and with the gun-boat, having one ſix and one three pounder, and and a flat boat, fell down the river to King's Ferry, where they were ordered to debark, and make a movement to Tappan, for the relief of the Block-Houſe. The garriſons of the redoubts, on the eaſt ſide, were doubled.

14th.—About noon, Maj. Graham returned; he had, with the detachment, embarked the preceding day, proceeded to King's Ferry, diſembarked, marched to Haverſtraw, where he met the militia returning; when he returned to the Ferry, re-embarked, and arrived at Weſt-Point about noon; having exhibited a ſpirit and expedition that did the detachment much honour.

The enemy were completely defeated in their deſign, by the militia, who early turned out, attacked, repulſed, and purſued them, until they retook all their plunder, except two horſes, and juſtly merited high commendation. The militia had one man wounded; the enemy were ſuppoſed to have had ſeveral killed and wounded. The ſame day, Brig. Gen. Hand was announced, in general orders, Adjutant-General of the army; in the room of Col. Scammel, who had diſcharged the duty of that office for ſome time, to great acceptation. Col. Scammel joined his regiment.

15th.—Intelligence was received that the enemy's fleet, which ſailed from New-York the preceding week, returned on Sunday, having found that the

French

French fleet were on the coaſt; their return occaſioned ſome conſternation at New-York. The ſame day, news reached the army, that Brig. Gen. Peleg Wadſworth, who commanded ſome militia levies in the eaſtern parts of Maſſachuſetts, had been ſurpriſed and taken priſoner in the night, by two Britiſh officers and ſome refugees, at a place called Cambden.

16th.—It was learnt that the French fleet, with troops, ſailed from Rhode-Iſland on the 8th; and it was ſaid that Admiral Arbuthnot, with the Britiſh fleet, came out of Gardner's Bay on the 10th. The ſmall-pox at this time made its appearance in the vicinity of the army, and ſeveral ſoldiers were taken down with that diſtemper. The enemy who were out a day or two before, on the eaſt ſide of the Hudſon, did no miſchief. About this time, a diſcovery was made, that a number of perſons at Stratford, Norwalk, &c. had been ſecretly aſſociating, to ſubmit to the enemy, if a favourable opportunity preſented; and to ſupply them with proviſions, furniſh intelligence, &c.

19th.—Letters from Gen. Greene, of the 28th ult. at Highrockford, on Haw River, adviſed that Lord Cornwallis had retreated from Hillſborough, and that Gen. Pickens and Col. Lee had fallen in with Col. Hamilton's corps, (riſing of 200) and had killed and taken almoſt every individual of them; and that ſeveral other ſkirmiſhes had happened, but nothing deciſive. Lord Cornwallis had erected the Royal ſtandard at Hillſborough, and iſſued a vain proclamation, as uſual.

By accounts from New-York, it appeared that the Britiſh had declared war againſt the Dutch, and had taken poſſeſſion of St. Euſtatia.

20th.—In the afternoon, Gen. Waſhington arrived at head-quarters, at New-Windſor, from the eaſtward.

21ſt.

21ſt.—Five priſoners of war were ſent to Weſt-Point, they were taken by ſome of the light parties below the lines; a ſixth who was taken was ſo badly wounded, as to be left behind for the preſent.

22d.—Several reſolutions of the State of Maſſachuſetts, in favour of the line of the army, and for the diſcharge of governmental ſecurities, were received at Weſt-Point.

23d.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh fleet, which ſailed from New-York ſome time before, and had been chaſed back by the French fleet, ſailed again on the preceding Wedneſday, for the ſouthward. It was ſaid that Sir Henry Clinton was on board, and that Gen. Knyphauſen was to command in his abſence—that the enemy were collecting a number of flat boats in Spitten-Devil Creek, near Kingſbridge, and that 24 were then collected—that Arnold's corps was under orders to be in readineſs to man the boats. Two ſpies were ſent out of New-York, the ſame day that the fleet ſailed; they were to paſs, by different routes, through the country to Canada.

24th.—A number of priſoners of war, who had been collected at Weſt-Point, were ſent off, under a guard of 60 men, commanded by Capt. Pope, to Lancaſter, in Pennſylvania.

28th.—The New-Hampſhire brigade were ordered to do duty on the lines; and the Rhode-Iſland regiment to return to their quarters near Robinſon's Mills.

29th.—News was received from Philadelphia, that the French and Engliſh fleets had had an engagement off the Capes of Virginia, but that the iſſue was not known. The ſame day, intelligence was received from New-York, that one of Admiral Arbuthnot's ſhips had returned to New-York, on Monday, and reported that there had been an engage-

ment

ment between the two fleets, and that it was a drawn battle.

31ſt.—A New-York paper of the 28th was received, in which it was ſaid that an engagement between the two fleets took place on the 16th, off the Capes of Virginia, in which ſeveral ſhips on both ſides received conſiderable damage; and that the Britiſh had 1 Lieutenant, 2 midſhipmen, and 40 ſeamen killed, and 80 wounded. The French account was not greatly different from that of the Britiſh, but did not mention the number of killed or wounded.

A number of American ſoldiers who had not had the ſmall-pox, were collected and inoculated.

April 3d.—Intelligence was received, that a battle had been fought between Gen. Greene's army and that of Lord Cornwallis. The action was bloody; and although his Lordſhip may be ſaid to have gained the victory, as Gen. Greene retreated a mile from the field of battle, yet it was a dear bought victory. Gen. Greene having loſt his horſes, 4 pieces of cannon fell into the hands of the enemy. Some of the Britiſh corps, and in particular the guards, ſuffered much. This day, Capt. Pray, of the water-guards, was reinforced with a whale-boat, a Subaltern, and 14 men.

4th.—Gen. Waſhington viſited the Point. In the afternoon, 2 priſoners of war were ſent up—they were of a party who had croſſed Croten River, and taken 16 head of cattle and 4 horſes. On their return, near Dobb's Ferry, they were overtaken by a party of the militia—the cattle, &c. retaken, and two of the party made priſoners. About this time, the ſouthern mail was carried off, between head-quarters and the Jerſies. The mail contained ſome letters of importance. The troops which had ſailed from New-York, arrived ſafe in the Cheſapeak.

7th.

7th.—Private intelligence was received, that four parties were to be ſent out—one to take Gen. Waſhington, another the Governor of New-Jerſey, a third the Governor of New-York, the object of the fourth not known. The ſame day, the gun-boat was ordered to take a ſtation oppoſite Fort Montgomery; additional guards to be mounted in the night time, and patroles to paſs frequently.

8th.—The enemy's flat boats, which had been collected near Kingſbridge, were removed down into the Eaſt River.

9th.—Intelligence was received from the commanding officer on the lines, that the enemy were out towards White Plains, ſaid to be about 90 horſe and 50 foot.

10th.—The great chain was hauled from off the beach near the red houſe at Weſt-Point, and towed down to the blocks, in order to its being laid acroſs the river—about 280 men were ordered on this duty.

11th.—The chain was properly fixed with great dexterity, and fortunately without any accident.

12th.—Our General viſited the patients who were under inoculation with the ſmall-pox, when 500 were turned out and drawn up, all of whom were then under the operation, and in a fine way. The ſame day, intelligence was received that the enemy were preparing for another embarkation at New-York, ſuppoſed for the ſouthward.

14th.—A groom, belonging to Col. Gunning of the 82d Britiſh regiment, came up; he deſerted from his maſter with a very good ſaddle-horſe, which he ſold for 100 dollars in ſpecie. Intelligence was received that the enemy had brought a large number of waggons acroſs the Sound from Long-Iſland, for the purpoſe of making a grand forage; the covering

party to consist of three or four hundred men, of different corps.

22d.—Two hundred and forty thousand dollars in new emission bills were brought to West-Point, from Boston, for the troops of the Massachusetts line.

24th.—Monsieur Beville, Quarter-Master of the French army at Newport, arrived at head-quarters, New-Windsor; he came on to view the roads, and determine on the best route, should the French army move that way, and to fix on proper places for magazines, &c.

26th.—Gen. Washington visited West-Point, with Monsieur Beville, &c. The next day, the latter set out on his return to Rhode-Island, taking the lower road through Connecticut. Many of the soldiers, who had gone through the small-pox, joined their regiments the next day: of 500 who had been inoculated, four only had then died. At this time, provisions were growing very scarce at West-Point, and the prospects daily growing more alarming. The magazines in Forts Clinton, Putnam, and some other of the most important works, had reserves of the best provisions, which were not to be touched; that, in case the enemy, by any sudden movement, should invest them, and cut off the communication with the country, the garrisons might be enabled to hold out, until other troops, or the militia of the country, could march to the relief of the besieged; but unfortunately, the scarcity of provisions had become so great, that even these reserves were broken in upon, and some of them nearly exhausted; when, after some other representations, our General addressed the following letter to Gen. Washington.

WEST-POINT,

WEST-POINT, *May* 6, 1781.

"DEAR GENERAL,

"I AM honoured with your's of the 5th and 6th, to which I shall duly attend.

"I hoped I should not have been compelled again to represent our situation on account of provisions; but supplies of meat have not arrived—all the Irish beef in the store has been gone for some days—we are at last forced in upon the reserves; that in Fort Clinton has all been taken out this day—the pork which was ordered to be reserved is all issued, except about 16 barrels—the boats are now up from below for provisions, with representations that they are out; the reserves will be gone in a few days if relief does not arrive, and hunger must inevitably disperse the troops. If the authority of our country will not order on supplies, I will struggle to the last moment to maintain the post: but regard to my own character compels me to be thus explicit—that if any ill consequences happen to this post, or its dependencies, through want of provisions, I shall not hold myself accountable for them.

"I have the honour to be, &c.

(Signed) W. HEATH.

His Excellency Gen. WASHINGTON."

To which the Commander in Chief wrote the following answer:

{HEAD-QUARTERS, NEW-WINDSOR, *May 8th*, 1781.

"DEAR SIR,

"DISTRESSED beyond expression at the present situation and future prospects of the army, with regard to provisions, and convinced with you, that, unless an immediate and regular supply can be obtained, the most dangerous consequences are to be apprehended—I have determined to make one great effort

effort more on the ſubject, and muſt requeſt that you will ſecond and enforce my repreſentations to, and requiſitions upon the New-England States, by your perſonal application to the ſeveral Executives, and even Aſſemblies, if ſitting, as I ſuppoſe they will be in the courſe of this month.

"From your intimate knowledge of our embarraſſed and diſtreſſed circumſtances, and great perſonal influence with the eaſtern States, I am induced to commit the execution of this intereſting and important buſineſs to you, and wiſh you to ſet out on this miſſion as early as may be convenient.

(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

On the next day, our General received the following letter of inſtructions, from the Commander in Chief, viz.

{HEAD-QUARTERS, NEW-WINDSOR, *May 9th*, 1781.

"DEAR SIR,

"YOU will be pleaſed to proceed immediately to the ſeveral eaſtern States, with the diſpatches addreſſed to the Governors of Connecticut, Rhode-Iſland, Maſſachuſetts Bay, and the Preſident of New-Hampſhire, on the ſubject of ſupplies for the army. The preſent critical and alarming ſituation of our troops and garriſons, for the want of proviſions, is (from the nature of your command) ſo perfectly known to you, and your perſonal influence with the New-England States is ſo conſiderable, that I could not heſitate to commit to you a *negociation*, on the ſucceſs of which, the very exiſtence of the army depends.

"The great objects of your attention and miſſion, are, 1ſt—An immediate ſupply of beef cattle. 2d—The tranſportation of all the ſalted proviſions in the weſtern

weſtern parts of Connecticut and Maſſachuſetts; and 3d—The eſtabliſhment of a *regular*, *ſyſtematic*, *effectual plan*, for feeding the army through the campaign. Unleſs the two former are effected, the garriſon of Fort Schuyler muſt inevitably, that of Weſt-Point may probably, *fall*, and the whole army be diſbanded: without the latter, the ſame perplexing wants, irregularities and diſtreſs, which we have ſo often experienced, will inceſſantly occur, with eventual far greater evils, if not final ruin.

"With regard to the particular mode of obtaining and tranſporting ſupplies, I will not preſume to dictate; but ſomething muſt now be attempted on the ſpur of the occaſion. I would ſuggeſt whether it would not be expedient for a Committee from the ſeveral States, (conſiſting of a few active, ſenſible men) to meet at ſome convenient place, in order to make out, upon a uniform and great ſcale, all the arrangements reſpecting ſupplies and tranſportation for the campaign. In the mean time, to avoid the impending diſſolution of the army, the States muſt individually comply preciſely with the requiſitions of the Quarter-Maſter and Commiſſary upon them.

"As the ſalted proviſions which have been put up for the public, in the eaſtern States, (except in the weſtern parts of Connecticut and Maſſachuſetts) cannot at preſent be tranſported to the army, you will obtain *accurate official returns* of the quantity that has been procured in the reſpective States, at what places, and in whoſe charge it actually is; and if it ſhould not all be collected and lodged in the depoſits that have been pointed out, you will urge this immediately to be done; and that the proviſions ſhould be repacked, ſtored, and taken care of in ſuch a manner, as to prevent the hazard of its being tainted or loſt by the approaching hot ſeaſon.

"I omit

"I omit entering into the detail of particulars, which it may be neceſſary to ſtate to the reſpective Executives, (or Legiſlatures, if in ſitting) to enforce the preſent requiſition, becauſe you are as well acquainted with the circumſtances of our diſtreſs, the proſpects before us, and the only reſources from whence we can derive relief, as it is poſſible for you to be. Previous to your departure, you will obtain from the Quarter-Maſter-General and Commiſſary with the army, the proper eſtimates of ſupplies and tranſportation to be required of the ſeveral States, together with all the light and information concerning their department, which may be requiſite to tranſact the buſineſs committed to you.

"After having delivered the diſpatches with which you are charged, and made ſuch further repreſentations as you may judge neceſſary, you will not ceaſe your applications and importunities, until you are informed officially, whether effectual meaſures are or will be taken, to prevent the army from ſtarving and diſbanding. What ſupplies in general, and particularly of *beef cattle*, may certainly be depended upon, to be delivered at fixed regular periods (monthly or weekly) at the army, during the whole campaign. When you ſhall have ſeen this buſineſs put upon the ſureſt footing and in the beſt train of execution, (which you will endeavour to have effected as early as poſſible) you will be pleaſed to report to me, without delay, the ſucceſs of your proceedings.

"I heartily wiſh you ſucceſs and a pleaſant journey, and am, &c.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

"P. S. I wiſh attention may be paid, to learn what quantity of rum is in ſtore, at what places, and in what manner it may be forwarded. In tranſportation, the arrangements ſhould be made with the States,

States, ſo as to have the articles brought entirely through to the army, without having them ſtopped on the road. You will alſo be pleaſed to urge the forwarding the ſummer cloathing. G. W.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

During the month of April, a large number of recruits from the eaſtern States, to fill up their reſpective battalions, arrived at Weſt-Point.

9th.—The Commander in Chief viſited Weſt-Point.

11th.—In the morning, our General left Weſt-Point, and proceeded up the river to New-Windſor, where he received from the Commander in Chief the diſpatches addreſſed to the ſeveral Executives of the New-England States; and in the afternoon croſſed the Hudſon, on his journey eaſtward. On his reaching Fiſhkill, he found that Governor Clinton, of New-York, was making every exertion in his power for the relief of the army—that he had iſſued impreſs warrants, to take flour and other proviſions where they could be found, &c.

14th.—He arrived at Hartford, where he found the Legiſlature in ſeſſion. The diſpatches to Governor Trumbull were immediately preſented to him, with an earneſt requeſt for ſpeedy relief. This venerable patriot gave aſſurance of his immediate attention and exertions, and accordingly laid the diſpatches from Gen. Waſhington before the Legiſlature, who alſo diſcovered the ſame noble patriotiſm. They inquired into the ſtate of their treaſury, and finding it was deſtitute of money, except a ſum appropriated to another purpoſe, they ordered this money to be taken, and directed Col. Champion, one of their number, (a gentleman remarkable for his knowledge in the ſtate of proviſions in all the towns, ſkill in purchaſing, and expedition in forwarding)

warding) immediately to purchaſe and forward on to the army 160 head of beef cattle, and 1,000 barrels of ſalted proviſions from their ſtores; and reſolved to make every other exertion in their power, to comply with the requiſitions of the Commander in Chief, as they reſpected both freſh and ſalted proviſions, by appointing a Committee for a general arrangement of ſupplies.

16th.—Our General left Hartford, and on the 18th reached Greenwich, in the State of Rhode-Iſland, where he waited upon Gov. Greene, and preſented the diſpatches from Gen. Waſhington. The Legiſlature of the State were not then in ſeſſion; but Gov. Greene made the moſt ſatisfactory aſſurances, that the State of Rhode-Iſland would adopt every meaſure recommended by the Commander in Chief. Our General left Greenwich the ſame day, and arrived at his houſe in Roxbury on the evening of the 19th, and the next day waited upon Gov. Hancock at Boſton, and preſented the diſpatches with which he was charged. The new Legiſlature of Maſſachuſetts were to convene on the laſt Wedneſday of the month. Gov. Hancock gave the fulleſt aſſurances, that in the interim the Executive would do every thing in its power for the immediate relief of the army, by directing the ſeveral contractors of proviſions in the State to forward all in their power with the utmoſt expedition.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received at Boſton, that the State ſhip-of-war, the Protector, of 28 guns, commanded by Capt. Williams, had been taken and carried into New-York.

The next day, intelligence was received, that on the 13th, Col. Greene, of the Rhode-Iſland regiment, who was doing duty on the lines of the American army, was ſurpriſed by a body of the enemy's horſe, ſuppoſed to be about 150 dragoons, and that the Colonel,

Colonel, Maj. Flagg, two Subalterns, and 27 men were killed, and ſeveral wounded. Col. Greene was a brave and intrepid officer, and his loſs was much regretted. The Colonel had taken poſt above and near to Croten River, at a place where the river was fordable, to prevent the enemy paſſing up by this ford to ravage the country. He had practiſed the greateſt vigilance in guarding this ford in the night time, taking off the guards after ſun-riſe, apprehending that the enemy would never preſume to croſs the river in the day time; but the enemy, having learnt his mode of doing duty, on the morning of the 13th effected his overthrow, by croſſing the ford ſoon after the guards had come off, and ſurrounding their quarters before they had an idea of any enemy being near them. In this ſituation, the utmoſt exertion could not then avail them.

23d.—Our General left Roxbury on his way to New-Hampſhire, arrived at Exeter on the evening of the 24th, and delivered to the Honorable Mr. Weare the diſpatches addreſſed to him. The Legiſlature of New-Hampſhire was not then in ſeſſion. The next day, he had an interview with the Honorable Preſident and the Council of Safety, when ſuch repreſentations, (in addition to the requiſitions of the Commander in Chief) were made to them, as the exigencies of the caſe required; and the fulleſt aſſurances were received, that every aid in the power of the State ſhould be afforded.

26th.—Our General left Exeter on his return, and on the 27th arrived at his houſe in Roxbury. On the 29th, he again waited on Gov. Hancock, and requeſted that the requiſitions of the Commander in Chief of the army might be predominant in all the public objects.

The 30th was the General Election day in Maſſachuſetts; and it appeared that his Excellency John

Hancock was re-elected Governor, who, as ſoon as the two Houſes were organized, laid the requiſitions of Gen. Waſhington before them.

June 2d.—Our General was heard before a Committee of both Houſes on the ſubject of his miſſion. The zeal and patriotiſm of the ſeveral Executives and Legiſlatures of the New-England States, to relieve and amply ſupply the army with proviſions, were ſo conſpicuous on this occaſion, that it is not poſſible to ſay which, or whether any one of them exceeded the other; each was for making every exertion in its power; and, to enſure ſucceſs to their reſolutions, they all fell in with the recommendation of the Commander in Chief, and appointed Committees to meet in Convention, to digeſt and ſyſtemize the buſineſs. The Committees met accordingly at Providence, in Rhode-Iſland, and were ſo fortunate in their arrangements, that the moſt ample ſupplies of meat were afterwards furniſhed for the main army, and a ſurplus of 100 head of beef cattle weekly ſent on after Gen. Waſhington towards Virginia, until he ordered a diſcontinuance of that ſupply, as will appear in the ſequel. While the New-England States were thus intent in ſupplying meat for the army, the State of New-York was equally aſſiduous in furniſhing flour and forage.

4th.—Intelligence was received by a veſſel from the Weſt-Indies, that the Count de Graſſe, with a French fleet of upwards of 20 ſail of the line, had arrived in that quarter. The ſame day, there was a confirmation of this news, and that the fleet, with troops on board, was ſeen coming this way.

The ſame day, intelligence was received, that there had been an action at the ſouthward, between Gen. Greene and the Britiſh army in that quarter. Gen. Greene, having reconnoitred Cambden, did not think it expedient to ſtorm the enemy's works, but retired

retired a little back, with a view to draw the enemy out; in this he ſucceeded, and an action commenced. The Maryland troops being attacked under ſome diſadvantage, an attempt was made to change their poſition; this was unfortunately taken by Gen. Greene's army for a retreat, and the whole army retreated accordingly. Gen. Greene had 17 men killed; his retreat was about 2 or 3 miles, and the troops were in high ſpirits. It is always a dangerous manœuvre to change a poſition in the face of an enemy; but neceſſity ſometimes requires it.

Gen. Phillips, of the Britiſh army, had died in Virginia, of a fever.

6th.—The Continental frigate, Alliance, arrived in Boſton harbour from France. The Alliance had taken 6 prizes; 2 Weſt-Indiamen, 2 ſloops of war, and 2 privateers. In the engagement with the ſloops of war, both of which engaged the Alliance in a calm, Capt. Barry was wounded in the ſhoulder by a grape-ſhot; the Captain of Marines, and 8 or 9 men killed, and about 20 wounded.

9th.—Orders came on from Gen. Waſhington, to forward with all poſſible diſpatch all the cannon, mortars, powder, ſhot, ſhells, and other military ſtores belonging to the United States, which were then in Maſſachuſetts and Rhode-Iſland, and alſo requeſting the loan of ſome heavy artillery, powder, &c. of the State. The moſt ſpirited meaſures were taken for completing the Continental battalions, and raiſing a body of militia to be in readineſs to march when called for.

The General Aſſembly of Maſſachuſetts, in their ſeſſion at this time, paſſed reſolutions for ſettling with the troops of their line to the laſt of the year 1780, making good the depreciation of their pay, &c.

21ſt.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh had formed a junction of their principal force at the

the ſouthward in Virginia, by which means Gen. Greene would deprive them of all their poſts in South-Carolina; that on the 10th of May, Lord Rawdon was compelled to evacuate Cambden with precipitation, leaving behind him 3 of his officers and 58 privates, who had been dangerouſly wounded, and were unable to be removed. He burnt part of the town, and ſome of his baggage. On the 11th of the ſame month, the ſtrong poſt of Orangeburgh ſurrendered to Gen. Sumpter; a Colonel, ſeveral officers, and upwards of 80 men were made priſoners. On the 12th, the garriſon of Fort Mott, conſiſting of 7 officers, 12 non-commiſſioned officers, and 165 privates, ſurrendered by capitulation to Gen. Marrion. On the 15th, Fort Granby capitulated to Lieut. Col. Lee; 1 Lieut. Colonel, 2 Majors, 6 Captains, 6 Lieutenants, 3 Enſigns, 1 Surgeon, 2 Serjeant-Majors, 17 Serjeants, 9 Corporals, and 305 privates ſurrendered; large quantities of proviſions, and ſome military ſtores were taken at ſome of the poſts. At the ſame time, the poſts of Auguſta and Ninety-Six were inveſted by Gen. Pickens, and Gen. Greene on the 16th had determined to march the army to expedite their reduction.

23d.—Intelligence was received, that ſome time before, the barracks in Fort Schuyler had taken fire, and were burnt down; and that afterwards the fort was diſmantled and evacuated. The ſame day it was reported, that the Spaniards had taken Penſacola from the Britiſh. The marine mortars, and a number of heavy iron cannon, 18 and 24 pounders, were removing from Boſton to the North River, New-York. The Britiſh forces in Virginia, after their junction, were ſaid to be about 6,000. The invalids, who had been doing duty in Boſton, received orders to march to Weſt-Point, where the whole

corps

corps was to be collected, and compose a part of the garrison of that post.

28th.—His Excellency the Commander in Chief was pleased to communicate to our General, that in the arrangement of the main army, the command of the right wing had been assigned to him.

29th.—A vessel arrived at Boston from Cadiz, with a quantity of cloathing for the United States. This vessel brought an account, that the British had again succoured the garrison of Gibraltar, but that the Spaniards continued the siege.

30th.—His most Christian Majesty's frigate, the Servilante, arrived in Boston harbour from the West-Indies; on her passage had a warm engagement with a British ship-of-war, when some damage was sustained on both sides. This frigate brought news, that the French had taken the island of Tobago, and had blocked up Admiral Rodney's fleet at Barbadoes.

July 4th was celebrated at Boston, being the Anniversary of the Declaration of American Independence.

6th.—Information was received, that Gen. Washington had ordered the American troops from their several cantonments, and that the whole had assembled, and were encamped near Peek's Kill.

Some of the enemy's cruizers from Penobscot were cruizing in the Bay, where they took several vessels; one within a league of the light-house.

11th.—Intelligence was received, that there had been a skirmish between the Americans and British, between White Plains and King's Bridge, but no particulars were received.

12th.—Our General set out from his house in Roxbury for the army.

19th.—The enemy's shipping, which were up the North River, ran down; there was a brisk cannonade at Dobb's Ferry.

21st.

21ſt.—The American field artillery, which had for ſome days been on board veſſels in the North River, proceeded downwards to the neareſt landing to the army.

When the enemy's ſhipping paſſed Dobb's Ferry, on the 19th, a box of powder on board the Savage ſhip-of-war took fire, ſuppoſed by the burſting of a howitzer ſhell, on which a number of the crew, apprehending that the ſhip would blow up, jumped overboard into the river. An American, who was a priſoner on board, jumped overboard at the ſame time, and ſwam on ſhore, relating what had happened; he alſo reported, that the Savage was ſeveral times hulled by our ſhot, and muſt have ſuffered conſiderable loſs. The late ſkirmiſh near King's Bridge was occaſioned by the American army's moving down, in order to give the French officers a view of the Britiſh out-poſts near the bridge. A number of Americans were killed and wounded by long ſhot from the yaugers of the enemy, who kept up a popping fire whenever they could reach our troops.

27th.—Our General arrived at the army, which was encamped at Phillipſburgh, in two lines; the park of artillery in the centre of the ſecond line. Accounts had been received from the ſouthward, that the enemy had no footing in Georgia, except Savannah, nor in South-Carolina, except Charleſton. The poſition which the American army now occupied was between the lines the preceding campaigns; conſequently the roads and commons, as well as the fields and paſtures, were covered with graſs; while the many deſerted houſes and ruined fences depicted the horrid devaſtations of war. The French army, under Gen. Rochambeau, was encamped at a ſmall diſtance, on the left of the Americans, in one line.

29th.—A forage was made towards Phillips's, conducted

conducted by Col. Scammel. It was said that some of the British troops had returned from the southward to New-York; and that those in Virginia were collected at Portsmouth.

August.—On the night of the 3d, about 11 o'clock, the British and American guard-boats met in the river, near Dobb's Ferry, when a considerable firing ensued; we had one man badly wounded, who died soon after. The damage sustained by the enemy was not known.

6th.—The Commander in Chief, attended by a number of the General Officers, reconnoitred towards King's Bridge, covered by strong detachments of cavalry and infantry. Three ships and a galley lay in the river between Fort Washington and Spitten-Devil Creek. The enemy did not make any movements. The morning of the 7th, about 2 o'clock, the army was awakened by the firing of cannon at Dobb's Ferry; it appeared that 2 of the enemy's gun-boats had come up as high as the ferry, probably to endeavour to seize some vessels or boats; on finding that they were discovered, they fired four cannon, but to no effect. Four cannon were discharged at the boats from the battery, on which they went down the river. Two days before, Delancy's corps ventured as far above King's Bridge, as Phillips's.

News was received, that the great French Financier, *Neckar*, had resigned, and that Monsieur Fleury had been appointed in his room.

Capt. Saltonstall, formerly of the frigate Warren, who was dismissed the service on account of his conduct in the Penobscot expedition, about this time behaved most gallantly in a privateer, on a cruize against the enemy.

The American army at this time continued in the same position at Phillipsburgh. The Connecti-

cut

cut and Rhode-Iſland lines, and 6 regiments of the Maſſachuſetts line, compoſed the front line; the New-Hampſhire line, four regiments of Maſſachuſetts, Crane's and Lamb's regiments of artillery, with the ſappers and miners, the ſecond line; the right wing commanded by Maj. Gen. Heath, the left wing by Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling; the advance of the American army on a height a little advanced of Dobb's Ferry, under the command of Col. Scammel, and Sheldon's dragoons near Dobb's Ferry. The French army in one line on the left of the Americans, with their legion under the Duke de Lauzun, at White Plains. Gen. Waterbury, with the militia under his command, towards New-Rochelle. The camps at this time ſwarmed with flies, which were very troubleſome.

11th.—Robert Morris, Eſq. the American Financier, and Richard Peters, Eſq. one of the Members of the Board of War, viſited the army. The ſame day, the advance of the army took a poſition a little more to the northward, and the dragoons were added to Col. Scammel's command. A fleet arrived at New-York from England; they brought over between 2 and 3,000 Heſſian recruits.

14th.—Col. Hazen's and Col. Vanſcaak's regiments joined the army. A French frigate arrived about this time at Rhode-Iſland, ſuppoſed to have brought news of the approach of the Count de Graſſe. A few nights before, Gen. Schuyler came very near being taken and carried off from his houſe in Albany.

In the general orders of the 15th, the army was directed to hold itſelf in the moſt perfect readineſs to march on the ſhorteſt notice.

16th.—It was whiſpered, that the Count de Graſſe, with 28 ſail of the line, beſides frigates, with a number of land forces on board, might ſoon be expected

on

on our coaſt, and theſe, with the ſquadron under the command of the Chevalier de Barras, would make a fleet of 36 ſail of the line, a force probably ſuperior to any the Britiſh could aſſemble in theſe ſeas.

Under proſpects ſo flattering, the Commander in Chief determined to ſtrike the enemy a capital blow in ſome quarter. To ſtrike at their very root in New-York, was a moſt deſirable object; but the ſituation of New-York with Long-Iſland, and Staten-Iſland, and the adjacent country, was ſuch, as would require a very large army to effect a complete inveſtiture, and give a proper ſecurity againſt the ſallies of the enemy, which, from ſituation, might be eaſily and frequently made—that ſuch an army muſt be compoſed, in a very conſiderable degree, of militia, to whom the continuing long in camp had often been found diſagreeable; and the French were not without apprehenſions that if their fleet entered the harbour of New-York, and became warmly engaged with the Britiſh ſhips and batteries, in the courſe of thoſe manœuvres which it might be neceſſary to make, ſome of their heavy ſhips, through the want of a competent knowledge of all parts of the bay, might get aground, or be damaged; while all theſe inconveniences would be avoided, in caſe Lord Cornwallis, with the Britiſh army in Virginia, were made the object, and his capture would be almoſt certain, while the American main army might be left in ſufficient ſtrength, to act on the defenſive againſt Sir Henry Clinton, and effectually cover the important poſts in the Highlands of New-York.

17th.—General Waſhington was pleaſed to communicate to our General, (in confidence) his intentions, at the ſame time intimating to him, that he ſhould give him the command of the main army during his abſence. The whole of the French army, with the two regiments of New-Jerſey, firſt regiment

of New-York, Col. Hazen's regiment, Col. Olney's regiment of Rhode-Iſland, Col. Lamb's regiment of artillery, and the light troops under the command of Col. Scammel, were detached for the expedition againſt Lord Cornwallis, and the army under his command, at York-Town, in Virginia.

18th.—Some of the corps began to move towards the ferries. The next day, the Commander in Chief was pleaſed to honour our General with the following.

"To Major General Heath.

"Sir,

"YOU are to take command of all the troops remaining in this department, conſiſting of the two regiments of New-Hampſhire, ten of Maſſachuſetts, and five of Connecticut infantry, the corps of invalids, Sheldon's legion, the 3d regiment of artillery, together with all ſuch State troops and militia as are retained in ſervice of thoſe which would have been under my own command.

"The ſecurity of Weſt-Point, and the poſts in the Highlands, is to be conſidered as the firſt object of your attention; in order to effect this, you will make ſuch diſpoſitions, as in your judgment the circumſtances ſhall from time to time require, taking care to have as large a ſupply of ſalted proviſions as poſſible, conſtantly on hand; to have the fortifications, works, and magazines repaired and perfected as far as may be; to have the garriſon at leaſt, in all caſes, kept up to its preſent ſtrength; to have the minutes, plans, and arrangements, for the defence and ſupport of this important poſt, perfectly underſtood and vigorouſly executed in caſe of any attempt againſt it. Ample magazines of *wood* and *forage* are to be laid in, againſt the approaching winter; the former ſhould be cut on the margin of the river, and tranſported to the garriſon

garriſon by water; the latter ought to be collected from the country below the lines, in the greateſt quantities poſſible, and depoſited in ſuch places as you ſhall judge proper.

"The force now put under your orders, it is preſumed, will be ſufficient for all the purpoſes above mentioned, as well as to yield a very conſiderable protection and cover to the country, without hazarding the ſafety of the poſts in the Highlands; this is to be eſteemed, as it reſpects the friendly inhabitants and reſources of the country, an extremely intereſting object; but when compared with the former, of a ſecondary nature. The protection of the northern and weſtern frontier of the State of New-York, as well as thoſe parts of that and other States moſt contiguous and expoſed to the ravages and depredations of the enemy, will claim your attention; but as the contingencies which are to be expected in the courſe of this campaign, may be ſo various, unforeſeen, and almoſt infinite, that no particular line of conduct can be preſcribed for them—upon all ſuch occaſions, you will be governed by your own prudence and diſcretion, on which the fulleſt confidence is placed.

"Although your general rule of conduct will be to act on the defenſive only, yet it is not meant to prohibit you from ſtriking a blow at the enemy's poſts or detachments, ſhould a fair opportunity preſent itſelf. The moſt eligible poſition for your army, in my opinion, will be above (that is, on the north ſide) of the Croten, as well for the purpoſe of ſupporting the garriſon of Weſt-Point, annoying the enemy, and covering the country, as for the ſecurity and repoſe of your own troops.

"Waterbury's brigade (which may be poſted towards the Sound) Sheldon's corps, the State troops of New-York, and other light parties may occaſionally

ally be made uſe of to hold the enemy in check, and carry on the petit-guerre with them; but I would recommend keeping your force as much collected and compact as the nature of the ſervice will admit, doing duty by corps inſtead of detachments, whenever it is practicable; and above all, exerting yourſelf moſt ſtrenuouſly and aſſiduouſly, while the troops are in a camp of repoſe, to make them perfect in their exerciſe and manœuvres, and to eſtabliſh the moſt perfect ſyſtem of diſcipline and duty. The good of the ſervice and emulation of corps, will, I am perſuaded, prompt the officers and men to devote their whole time and attention to the pleaſing and honourable taſk of becoming maſters of their profeſſion. The uncertainty which the preſent movement of the army will probably occaſion with the enemy, ought to be increaſed by every means in your power, and the deception kept up as long as poſſible. It will not be expedient to prevent the militia, which were ordered, from coming in, until the arrival of the Count de Graſſe, or ſomething definite and certain is known from the ſouthward; and even theſe circumſtances may, (but of this you will be adviſed) render it adviſeable to keep the enemy at New-York in check—prevent their detaching to reinforce their ſouthern army, or to haraſs the inhabitants on the ſea-coaſts.

"The redoubt on the eaſt ſide of Dobb's Ferry is to be diſmantled and demoliſhed; the platforms to be taken up, and tranſported up the river, if it can be conveniently done. The block-houſe on the other ſide to be maintained, or evacuated and deſtroyed, as you ſhall judge proper. The water-guards, and other precautions to prevent ſurpriſe, you will be pleaſed to take into your conſideration, and regulate in ſuch a manner as you ſhall judge moſt expedient. You will be pleaſed to keep me regularly adviſed of every

every important event which ſhall take place in your departments.

"Given under my hand, at head-quarters, near Dobb's Ferry, this 19th day of Auguſt, 1781.

(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

"P. S. By the act of Congreſs of the 3d of Oct. 1780, a return is to be made to them annuallly, on, or before the firſt of September, of the troops belonging to the ſeveral States, that requiſitions may be made for completing the ſame. This you will pleaſe to have done by the troops under your command.

"The preſervation of the boats is a matter of very great importance, to which you will attend. Let all the new boats, and ſuch others as are not abſolutely neceſſary, and alotted to the ſervice of the garriſon, be hauled up, and put under the care of a guard, ſo that the perſon to whom they are committed, ſhall be accountable for every boat.

"The abuſes committed by people belonging to commiſſioned whale-boats, on Long-Iſland, ought to be inquired into and ſuppreſſed, eſpecially as Congreſs have ordered thoſe commiſſions to be revoked.

G. W."

19th.—About noon, his Excellency Gen. Waſhington left the army, ſetting his face towards his native State, in full confidence, to uſe his own words, "*with a common bleſſing*," of capturing Lord Cornwallis and his army; while our General was left to watch Sir Henry Clinton, and guard againſt thoſe attempts which it was probable he would make to ſuccour Cornwallis, direct, or by making ſuch other movements as might tend to induce Gen. Waſhington to give up his object, or to avail himſelf of ſome important poſts in his abſence. Sir Henry Clinton was conſequently on the rack, to deviſe ſomething

which

which ſhould effect this purpoſe; a ſtroke at the poſts in the Highlands, Connecticut, New-Jerſey, Albany and Philadelphia, was contemplated. Againſt all this had our General to guard.—Let impartiality judge, and candour decide on his conduct.

On the morning of the ſame day, the French army marched from their encampment towards King's Ferry, where they were to croſs the river. The American park of artillery, Col. Olney's regiment, and the New-York regiment, decamped and moved the ſame way.

20th.—A little after noon, our General ordered off the baggage to the ſtrong grounds near Young's, which at about 6 o'clock was followed by the army, marching by the left in one column, which took a ſtrong poſition during the night. The pickets after duſk were drawn back a little to the northward of the former encampment. The advanced parties under Maj. Scott were ordered to join their reſpective regiments, and Sheldon's horſe to patrole in the front.

21ſt.—Col. Putnam, with 320 infantry, Col. Sheldon's horſe, and two companies of the New-York levies, were ordered to form an advance for the army, and remain at or near their preſent ground. About 12 o'clock at noon, the army took up its line of march, and halted at night on the lower parts of North-Caſtle. Two regiments had been detached on the march to Sing-Sing church, to cover a quantity of baggage belonging to the French army, aſſiſt in removing it, &c. and a detachment was ſent to the New Bridge, to ſecure a quantity of flour lodged near that place.

22d.—The army marched from North-Caſtle, and encamped at Crom-Pond; all the French ſtores at Tarrytown and Sing-Sing had been ſecured.

23d.

23d.—The army marched from Crom-Pond, and took a ſtrong poſition at Peek's Kill; the firſt line encamping before the village, and the ſecond behind it. After the troops were encamped, 80 waggons were ſent off to aſſiſt in forwarding the ſtores of the army with Gen. Waſhington. Intelligence was received that a frigate and ſtore-ſhip had arrived at Boſton, from France, with military ſtores, &c. for the United States.

24th.—The French troops had not all paſſed the Ferry—150 Americans were ſent to aid them, and at evening 150 more. Intelligence was received that a large French fleet had been ſeen ſtanding for the continent.

26th.—The whole of the French army had croſſed the river. Gen. Waſhington was as far as Ramapaugh in the forenoon. Six deſerters came in from the enemy, and three priſoners of war belonging to Delancy's corps, were ſent up; they had taken and were driving off about 30 ſheep, which were recovered.

27th.—Diſpatches were ſent off to Gov. Trumbull at Hartford, and Gov. Hancock at Boſton. A heavy cannonade was heard towards New-York, from early in the morning till two in the afternoon, ſuppoſed to be off at ſea.

30th.—At evening a detachment conſiſting of 250 men, marched towards the New Bridge, where waggons were collecting for a grand forage, which was to be covered by this detachment and the troops on the lines—the whole under the command of Col. Greaton. By the laſt accounts, Gen. Waſhington was as far as Chatham, in the Jerſies.

31ſt.—Colonel Laurens paſſed the army, on his way from Boſton to Philadelphia: he had brought from France a large ſum in ſpecie, for the United States. Col. Laurens reported the friendly diſpoſi-

tion

tion of the European powers towards the United States; that Great-Britain continued to ſtand without a ſingle ally, nor could ſhe obtain one in the war in which ſhe was engaged.

September 1ſt.—The foragers returned with 42 loads of hay. A Heſſian rifleman came in with his rifle.

The ſame day, letters were received from Gen. Waſhington, dated at Trenton, the 29th ult. mentioning that a Britiſh fleet of 15 ſail of the line had arrived at Sandy-Hook from the Weſt-Indies. The ſame evening, about 40 Indians, from the Oneida and other neighbouring tribes, came to the army, on their way after Generals Waſhington and Rochambeau.

2d.—Intelligence was received from New-York, that a fleet, under the command of Admiral Sir Samuel Hood, had arrived at Sandy-Hook from the Weſt-Indies, conſiſting of 14 ſail of the line, three 44 gun ſhips, one of 28, a ſloop and fire-ſhip. The ſhips of the line were, Barfleur, of 90 guns, Princeſſa, Invincible, Alcide, Alfred, Ajax, Reſolution, Centaur, Intrepid, Terrible, Montague, Shrewſbury, Belliqueax, and ——, 74 guns each. It was ſaid that the 1ſt battalion of Royal, 13th and 69th Britiſh regiments came in the fleet.

3d.—Intelligence was received, that Gen. Waſhington was at Philadelphia the preceding Friday, and that his army was to march from Trenton, as yeſterday.

4th.—Intelligence was received from New-York, that the Britiſh fleet had failed to counteract the French. The day before, the ſouthern poſt-rider, with the mail, was ſtopped near Pompton in the Jerſies, and the mail carried off; the horſe was left in the road. The ſame day, a fleet of 26 ſail, ſome

of

of which were large, paſſed Stamford to the eaſtward.

6th.—Intelligence was received from New-York, that an embargo was laid on the ſhipping there, and that 6 Britiſh tranſports had been taken by the French. The enemy's ſhipping in the North River above Fort Waſhington, had all gone down.

7th.—Intelligence was received from New-York, that the Count de Graſſe had arrived in the Cheſapeak on the 31ſt ultimo; that a 64 gun ſhip and a frigate had entered York River; that Lord Cornwallis was preparing for a vigorous defence; and that 6 ſail of victuallers had been taken by Admiral Barras. A heavy cannonade was heard the day before, towards the Hook. The ſame day, there was much paſſing between the city and Fort Waſhington, which occaſioned a great riſing of duſt, viſible at a great diſtance; and there was a rumbling of carriages in the night. Mr. Rivington, in his paper, obſerved the preſent to be the moſt intereſting and critical era of the war. The ſame evening, a detachment marched from our army for a grand forage.

8th.—Two companies of Col. Weiſſenfel's regiment were ordered to Albany, to cover that city againſt the deſigns of the enemy. The ſame evening, our General received a letter from Gen. Waſhington, dated at the Head of Elk the preceding day, in which he obſerves, "I have it now in my power to congratulate you on the arrival of Count de Graſſe, with 28 ſhips of the line and ſome frigates, in the Cheſapeak, with a body of land forces on board, which he debarked immediately on his arrival. On his paſſage, he took Lord Rawdon, who was bound from Charleſton to England. This arrival, with Col. Laurens, from France, muſt fill the United States with the moſt happy proſpects and expecta-

tions."----"I am thus far on my way to Virginia, with the troops under my command; we are now embarking the heavy baggage, ſtores, and ſome of the troops."----"I muſt beg of you not to forget ſending the quantity of beef I requeſted, as I muſt at preſent altogether depend on that ſupply."

The ſame day, intelligence was received, that the enemy's fleet, which ſailed up the Sound on the 4th, had made a deſcent on New-London. At evening, Maj. Talmadge, with 20 cavalry and 200 infantry, was ordered to move immediately towards the Sound. The preceding day, about 30 ſail of the enemy's veſſels paſſed the Sound towards New-York.

On the morning of the 9th the foragers returned, with 28 loads of hay.

10th.—Intelligence was received from Governor Trumbull, that the enemy had made a deſcent on New-London, on the evening of the 6th, with about 2,000 infantry and 300 light-horſe. Their fleet conſiſted of about 40 ſail of ſhips-of-war and tranſports; they plundered the inhabitants of property to a large amount, and burnt a great part of the town. The militia behaved very gallantly, and a number of very valuable citizens were killed; among others, Col. Ledyard, Captains Saltonſtall and Richards. The enemy, in three aſſaults on the fort on Groton ſide of the river, were repulſed, but on the fourth attempt carried it. The militia collecting in greater numbers, with ſome pieces of artillery, the enemy retreated on board their ſhipping. Part of the American ſhipping in the harbour were ſcuttled, and ſome were run up the river. In Governor Trumbull's letter, the enemy were charged with behaving in a wanton and barbarous manner; and that of between 70 and 80 men who were killed, 3 only were killed before the enemy entered the Fort, and the garriſon had ſubmitted; that on Col. Ledyard's delivering his

ſword

ſword reverſed, to the commanding officer, who entered the fort, the officer immediately plunged it in the Colonel's body, on which ſeveral ſoldiers bayoneted him. It is alſo aſſerted, that upon the foregoing taking place, an American officer, who ſtood near to Col. Ledyard, inſtantly ſtabbed the Britiſh officer who ſtabbed the Colonel; on which, the Britiſh indiſcriminately bayoneted a great number of Americans.

This expedition was commanded by Arnold. The Britiſh loſs was very conſiderable in killed and wounded; among the former was Major Montgomery. Arnold himſelf continued on the New-London ſide, and while his troops were plundering and burning, was ſaid to have been at a houſe where he was treated very politely; that while he was ſitting with the gentleman regaling himſelf, the latter obſerved, that he hoped his houſe and property would be ſafe; he was anſwered, that while he (Arnold) was there, it would not be touched; but the houſe, except the room in which they were, was ſoon plundered, and found to be on fire. During the plunder of the town, the Britiſh (as is always the caſe in a plunder) were in great confuſion, ſetting their arms againſt trees and fences, while they were collecting and carrying off their plunder; in this ſituation they might have been eaſily defeated; nor would it have been the firſt time that an army in poſſeſſion of victory, loſt it in this way; hence by the articles of war, "If any officer or ſoldier ſhall leave his poſt or colours, to go in ſearch of plunder, he is liable to ſuffer death for the offence."

It is not meant to exculpate or to aggravate the conduct of the enemy on this occaſion—but two things are to be remembered; firſt, that in almoſt all caſes the ſlaughter does but begin when the vanquiſhed give way; and it has been ſaid, that if this was fully conſidered,

conſidered, troops would never turn their backs, if it were poſſible to face their enemy: Secondly, in all attacks by aſſault, the aſſailants, between the feelings of danger on the one hand, and reſolution to overcome it on the other, have their minds worked up almoſt to a point of fury and madneſs, which thoſe who are aſſailed, from a confidence in their works, do not feel; and that conſequently when a place is carried, and the aſſailed ſubmit, the aſſailants cannot inſtantaneouſly curb their fury to reaſon, and in this interval, many are ſlain in a way which a cool byſtander would call wanton and barbarous, and even the perpetrators themſelves, when their rage ſubſided, would condemn; but while the human paſſions remain as they now are, there is ſcarcely a remedy.

11th.—Arnold's fleet was ſtill in the Sound, and further depredations were expected; they were this morning at Killingſworth, and about noon 50 ſail of veſſels came to anchor between Norwalk and Stamford. Major Talmadge, who was returning, upon ſuppoſition that the enemy had returned to New-York, was ordered back immediately. Maj. Knapp was detached with 100 men to reinforce Col. Putnam on the lines; and Brig. Gen. Huntington, with the firſt Connecticut brigade, and a detachment of artillery was ordered to march towards the Sound. The ſame day, the army moved from its encampment at Peek's-Kill, and took a very ſtrong poſition on Bald Hill, where it encamped in one line, the ſecond line forming in the centre of the firſt; and the 8th Maſſachuſetts regiment was ordered to march from the army, and reinforce the garriſon of Weſt-Point.

13th.—Intelligence was received, that on the enemy's anchoring off Stamford, Maj. Talmadge advanced towards the town; Gen. Huntington had advanced as far as Bedford; and that the preceding morning the enemy's fleet came to ſail, and ſtood

principally

principally to the weſtward; ſome of the fleet, at the ſame time, ſtanding over to Huntington Bay, Long-Iſland, Maj. Talmadge was to remain at or near Canaan, for the protection of the inhabitants; Gen. Huntington to return to the army.

The Heſſian recruits, which had a little before arrived at New-York, were very ſickly, and many died. The fleet which had arrived at New-York were in bad condition. The Prudente and Robuſte, lay at the ſhip-yard; the Roebuck had been ſent to Halifax to repair, and had not returned. Mr. Rivington, in his paper, talked of another fleet coming out, under Admiral Digby.

15th.—The enemy had ſtill a number of troops on board their tranſports in the harbour. The ſame day, intelligence was received from Canada, that the enemy were preparing a number of canoes and ſmall batteaux at St. John's, baking hard bread at Montreal, and forwarding it to St. John's, &c. The Cork fleet had arrived at Quebec. The ſame day, about 40 ſail of the enemy's veſſels paſſed in the Sound to the eaſtward.

17th.—Intelligence was received, that a brigade of troops had lately come to St. John's, from whence an incurſion on our northern frontier might be expected; on which the whole of Wieſſenfel's regiment was ordered for Albany immediately; notice was alſo given to the eaſtern Governors, and the Brigadiers commanding the militia in the counties of Hampſhire and Berkſhire, in Maſſachuſetts, requeſted to lend their aid, if it ſhould be found neceſſary.

18th.—A deſerter came in from New-York; he reported, that when he left the city, about 20 ſail of veſſels were falling down to the Hook, ſaid to have troops on board.

19th.—The 2d and 5th Maſſachuſetts regiments were ordered to go into garriſon at Weſt-Point, and the

the 7th regiment to join the army; it had before been in garriſon. The ſame day, intelligence was received from New-York, that there had been a naval engagement off the Cheſapeak, between 19 ſail of Britiſh men-of-war, and 24 French ſhips of the line: the ſtory was ſo badly told in New-York, that there was good grounds to conclude that the Britiſh had received a ſevere drubbing. On the 17th, when a packet arrived at New-York, 3,000 people were ſaid to be waiting on the wharves to learn the news, but not a word tranſpired; nor did the countenance of the officer who landed, appear to beam with the ſmiles of fortune. The enemy had taken a number of heavy cannon from the grand battery, which were put on board ſhip. The troops ſtill remained on board the tranſports, and had fallen down to the Hook. A mortal ſickneſs prevailed in Delancy's corps, at Morriſſania, which was much reduced in its numbers.

22d.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh fleet had been pretty ſeverely handled by the French, and ſome of the ſhips were conſiderably damaged: that the inhabitants were in great conſternation in New-York; many were packing up their goods: that Arnold's loſs at New London, in both killed and wounded, was very conſiderable: that the 38th, 47th and 50th regiments were on that expedition, and then conſidered as unfit for duty. Gen. Sir Henry Clinton was ſaid to be embarked with the troops, report ſaid from 7 to 8 thouſand; among them the Britiſh and Heſſian grenadiers, light-infantry, 42d regiment, &c.

24th.—A grand forage was made below the lines. The Britiſh fleet returned to the Hook on the 20th. The Prudente of 64 guns, had gone down in a miſerable condition to join the fleet; and the Robuſte of 74 guns, had hauled down nearly oppoſite to the city.

city. The heavy cannon had been taken from Fort Waſhington, as well as the grand battery.

25th.—Forty-ſix loads of forage were brought off from below the lines. Mr. Rivington publiſhed another account of the naval engagement between the fleets on the 15th; he acknowledged that ſeveral ſhips were much damaged, and that two which had come from the Weſt-Indies leaky, were more ſo after the engagement: that in particular, the Terrible was ſo much damaged, as occaſioned the taking out her guns, &c. and ſetting her on fire; after which the fleet returned to the Hook, finding it impracticable to ſuccour Lord Cornwallis. It was ſaid that the troops which had embarked, (about 6,000) had debarked on Staten Iſland. Other accounts ſtated their number not more than 4,000—they were impreſſing and collecting waggons.

27th.—Three deſerters came in from Col. Wurmb's corps, with their arms, &c.

28th.—Apprehending that the enemy might have intentions of croſſing over from Staten Iſland to the Jerſies, a detachment of 300 infantry, with light artillery, under the command of Col. Swift, were ordered to croſs the ferry the next morning, and move as far as Ramapaugh, to be at hand to aid the militia, in caſe the enemy ſhould land in the Jerſies.

29th.—Intelligence was received from the northward, that a ſmall party had been ſent from St. John's to Saratoga, to take a priſoner or two, for the purpoſe of obtaining information; but that five of the party, with the inſtructions of the Britiſh commandant at St. John's, were taken and brought in by Captain Dunham.

30th.—Intelligence was received that Admiral Digby arrived at New-York the 25th inſt. with three ſail of the line, and one frigate. Prince William Henry, the King of England's third ſon, came in

this

this fleet. It was said in New-York, that Lord Cornwallis's force in Virginia consisted of 5,000 regular troops, and 3,000 levies; but that behind him was a numerous continental army—before him a powerful French fleet. The troops on Staten Island were at this time suspected to be planning some secret expedition; and Congress, from some intelligence which they had received, were not without apprehensions that Philadelphia might be their object. The militia of Pennsylvania were held in readiness for instant service; and our General was notified to hold the army in readiness to move, if necessary. The enemy were carefully watched. Sir Henry Clinton was endeavouring to devise some means whereby he might relieve Lord Cornwallis; but nothing would have diverted Gen. Washington from capturing him. The New-York papers were filled with addresses and adulations to their young Prince; but these could not retard the advances of a Washington, or defend Cornwallis. The fleet of Count de Grasse made several captures.

October 2d.—A detachment marched for a grand forage.

3d.—At 3 o'clock, A. M. Major Trescott, with a detachment of 100 men from Maj. Talmadge's command, crossed the Sound to Long-Island, and completely surprised the enemy's Fort *Slonge*, making 2 Captains, 1 Lieutenant, and 18 rank and file, prisoners; of the enemy, 2 were killed, and 2 wounded; of the Americans, none were killed, and but one wounded. Two double fortified 4 pounders, found in the fort, were damaged. One brass three-pounder, with a number of small-arms, ammunition, cloathing, British goods, &c. were brought off. This enterprize was conducted with address and gallantry.

4th.—The foragers returned, with upwards of 40 loads of hay.

5th.

5th.—A detachment of dragoons were ſent towards Boſton, and 100 picked infantry under Maj. Morrel were to march towards Springfield, to eſcort a large ſum of money (brought by Col. Laurens) to Philadelphia.

6th.—The enemy were again embarking their troops from Staten Iſland; they embarked on board the men-of-war. Conſidering their caſe as deſperate, they were determined to make one deſperate attempt. Ten or twelve fire-ſhips were prepared to ſail with the fleets; they were filled with proper materials for the purpoſe, and, to prevent ſuſpicion, they were new painted, had guns, and the appearance of ſome of the handſomeſt ſhips in the fleet.

8th.—A detachment was ſent on a grand forage. The ſame day, intelligence was received, that a party of refugees and Indians, from Niagara, had burnt a number of houſes and barns at Warworſing; they were purſued by Col. Paulding, but could not be come up with. Sir Henry Clinton, in his orders of the 3d, directed 3,000 regular troops to embark on board the men-of-war as marines; it was ſuppoſed that every thing would be ready by the 14th. Secret intelligence had been received from Albany, that the enemy had intentions on that city; that they would advance by different routes, and on their near approach, would be joined by ſome diſaffected people in the country, and the deſtruction of the city be effected. Brig. Gen. Stark had been in command for ſome time at the northward.

10th.—Our General ordered the 2d New-Hampſhire regiment, and a detachment of artillery, to the northward. Gen. Stark had executed a Mr. Loveleſs, ſent in by Capt. Dunham, as a ſpy.

13th.—Intelligence was received, that the enemy had advanced to this ſide of Lake George.

14th.—The 1ſt New-Hampſhire and 10th Maſſachuſetts regiments, with a detachment of artillery, were ordered to Albany, were matters wore a more ſerious aſpect.

15th.—Intelligence was received, that on the 28th ult. Gen. Waſhington took a poſition in the neighbourhood of York—the enemy gave him no annoyance: on his advancing, a body of horſe paraded before the enemy's works; but retired upon the diſcharge of a few ſhot at them.

The 29th was ſpent in taking another poſition as near the enemy's advanced works, as could be done without placing the encampment in the range of their ſhot. Some ſkirmiſhing happened between our riflemen and the yaugers, in which the former had the advantage. At night, the enemy abandoned all their out-poſts, (ſome of which were very advantageous) and retired to the town; the Americans occupied the ſame ground, and made lodgements at a ſhort diſtance from the enemy's lines. The heavy artillery was to be brought up as ſoon as poſſible, and the ſiege puſhed with vigour.

30th.—Col. Scammell, who was officer of the day, was wounded and taken priſoner by a party of the enemy's horſe, as he was reconnoitring one of the works which had juſt before been evacuated.

Our General had ordered Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling to proceed to Albany, and take the command of the troops in that quarter; he ſet out for the northward about noon on the 16th. The ſame day, Col. Tupper, with the 1ſt New-Hampſhire and 10th Maſſachuſetts regiments, and a detachment of artillery, embarked at Fiſhkill Landing, and arrived at Albany in 18 hours afterwards. The ſame day, it was learnt that the enemy's fleet at New-York, was 24 or 25 ſail of the line; and that 5 or 6,000 of the beſt troops at New-York had embarked, and were on the

point

point of failing to attempt to relieve Earl Cornwallis; it was alſo ſaid that Cornwallis was ſhort of bread, and that his meat proviſions would not laſt him more than the month out, at fartheſt—he had received freſh proviſions but once after he was blockaded.

On the morning of the 17th, a horſe-guard belonging to Gen. Howe's diviſion, conſiſting of a ſerjeant, 9 privates, and 8 waggoners, with 30 horſes, were taken by Delancy's horſe a little below Croten River, where the horſes had been put to paſture contrary to orders. A Court of Inquiry was ordered to inveſtigate the matter.

18th.—It was learnt, that on the preceding Saturday, a Britiſh 74 gun ſhip was ſtruck by the lightning at New-York, and ſuſtained conſiderable damage.

22d.—Gen. Greene's official letter to Congreſs, announced that his battle on the 8th, near Eutaw Springs, was well fought; that on the field he obtained the victory, drove and purſued the enemy for ſeveral miles; when the enemy, throwing themſelves into a three-ſtory brick houſe, a ſtockaded garden, and thick bruſh, renewed the action, when, after ſome efforts to diſlodge them, Gen. Greene thought it adviſeable to call off his troops, which was done, and the wounded brought off, except ſuch as were under the fire of the houſe. Four braſs ſix-pounders having had their horſes killed, were alſo left near the houſe, in poſſeſſion of the enemy. This was ſomewhat ſimilar to what took place at Germantown battle, and now very probably ſaved the Britiſh from a total defeat. The cloſe of this action barred its being called a complete victory, although its *effects* proved it ſuch. General Greene, of Continental State troops and militia, had one Lieutenant Colonel, 1 Major, 6 Captains, 8 Subalterns, 8 Serjeants, and 114 rank and file killed—5 Lieutenant Colonels,

13 Captains, 25 Subalterns, 32 Serjeants, and 300 rank and file wounded—1 Serjeant, and 40 rank and file miſſing—1 Brigadier-General of militia wounded. Of the enemy, 500 priſoners, including the wounded, which the enemy left behind them, were taken; and it was ſuppoſed that the killed and other wounded of the enemy, muſt be nearly 600 more. Perhaps troops never fought better than the Americans did in this battle; and of the Britiſh, General Greene obſerved, "the enemy fought with equal ſpirit, and worthy of a better cauſe."

By a letter from Gen. Waſhington, of the 6th, it appeared that the operations againſt Earl Cornwallis had then gone on but ſlowly, but that the trenches were to be opened that night. The ſame letter obſerved, that ſome miſunderſtanding, which had ſubſiſted in Vermont, was ſettled; and that Gen. Enos, and the troops under his command, were to be ſubject to the orders of our General.

The army in the Highlands were at this time ſhort of flour, occaſioned by the dry ſeaſon, and conſequent want of water for the mills.

24th.—A letter was received from Gen. Waſhington, dated at York, in Virginia, the 12th, by which it appeared that the trenches were opened on the night of the 6th, without being diſcovered by the enemy until day-light. The approaches were carried on within 600 yards of the enemy's works, without any loſs—the 7th and 8th were employed in erecting batteries—on the 9th, two batteries, one on the right, and the other on the left, were opened. The next morning, four other batteries being completed, the whole opened a heavy fire of cannon and mortars, which ſoon become ſo warm as to drive the enemy from their guns, and their fire was almoſt totally ſilenced—very little return was made afterwards. The Charron, of 44 guns, with one tranſ-

port,

port, took fire from our ſhot or ſhells, the evening of the 10th, and were both conſumed. The 11th, another ſhip was deſtroyed in the ſame manner. The ſame night, the ſecond parallel was advanced within leſs than 400 yards of the enemy's lines. This approach was alſo effected without annoyance; and on the 12th, the fatigue men were ſecurely covered, while they were completing the works. The ſame evening there was a flying report, and which ſeemed to gain credit, that Earl Cornwallis, and his army, ſurrendered on the 17th; and that Count de Graſſe had gone out to meet Admiral Digby.

25th.—Intelligence was received of the advance of the enemy at the northward.

26th.—Col. Francis, with the ſpecie from Boſton, paſſed the river; the money was eſcorted by 40 horſe of Sheldon's regiment, and 150 infantry; and Lieut. Col. Mellen, was ordered with a detachment of infantry, to move on the lower road as far as Morriſtown, keeping between the eſcort and the enemy.

28th.—In the afternoon, a letter from Gen. Waſhington to our General, announced the pleaſing and highly important news of the complete capture of Earl Cornwallis, and his whole army, on the 19th. Our General had aſſured the army, that the moment he received the certain intelligence of the capture of Cornwallis, it ſhould be announced to them by the diſcharge of 13 cannon, near his quarters; theſe were now the heralds to the army, and were inſtantly anſwered by a like number of field-pieces in every brigade on the ground.

On the 15th, two of the enemy's redoubts were ſtormed, one by the Americans, and the other by the French troops, and ſoon carried, with but little loſs. The poſſeſſion of theſe redoubts, gave the allied army in a great meaſure the command of the

other

other works of the enemy; who, on the 17th, beat a parley, and on the 19th ſurrendered: 3,500 regular troops laid down their arms; 2,000 more were ſick and wounded, in the hoſpitals. Theſe were excluſive of ſailors, negroes, &c. Earl Cornwallis was to go to England on parole, and remain a priſoner until exchanged. The officers and men were to be exchanged as far as the garriſon of Charleſton would extend; the remainder were to continue priſoners of war; the Britiſh were to retain their private baggage. It was ſaid that more than 100 veſſels were taken from the enemy. A detail of the priſoners taken, was ſtated as follows: one Lieut. General, one Brig. General, 2 Colonels, 14 Lieut. Colonels, 16 Majors, 97 Captains, 180 Lieutenants, 55 Enſigns, 4 Chaplains, 6 Adjutants, 18 Quarter-Maſters, 18 Surgeons, 25 Mates, 385 Serjeants, 197 Drummers and Trumpeters, 6,039 rank and file, 189 in the Commiſſary's department—ſailors in the pay of the King, 840—killed during the ſiege, 309—deſerters, 44—75 braſs cannon, 169 iron do. 5,743 muſkets with bayonets, 915 muſkets without bayonets, and 1,136 damaged muſkets were among the trophies of victory. Thus was the principal force of the enemy cruſhed in the ſouth. At the northward, the enemy were advancing, both by the way of the Lakes and by the Mohawk River. Col. Willet, with his regiment of New-York levies, and ſome militia of New-York, and from the weſtern parts of Maſſachuſetts, were advancing to meet Maj. Roſs, who, with from 500 to 700 men, principally Britiſh troops, was making his way towards Albany, through the ſettlements on the Mohawk.

29th.—Intelligence was received that an action took place the preceding Thurſday, near Johnſtown, between the troops under the command of Col. Willet and Maj. Roſs.

Col.

Col. Willet having advanced until he had arrived near Maj. Roſs, detached Maj. Rowley of Maſſachuſetts, with a body of militia, by a circuitous movement, to get in the rear of the enemy, with orders, that as ſoon as he heard the firing in the front, to fall on them. Maj. Rowley performed his manœuvre accordingly; and as ſoon as Col. Willet judged that the Major had gained the rear of the enemy, he made a vigorous charge on their front, when they immediately gave way, and to all appearance the Colonel was nearly in the graſp of victory, when, all at once, without any viſible occaſion the levies came to a ſtand, and then immediately began to fall back, the enemy facing about and charging vigorouſly; the Colonel's braſs field-piece and ammunition tumbrel fell into the hands of the enemy, and a rout ſeemed to be taking place, when Maj. Rowley, not knowing what had taken place in the front, commenced a briſk attack on the enemy's rear; this inſtantly threw them into confuſion; the levies rallied in the front, and fought with redoubled bravery; the field-piece and tumbrel were retaken, and the enemy put to a moſt complete rout, and purſued until the levies, militia, and ſome Oneida Indians who were with Col. Willet, were worn down with fatigue. It was not poſſible to aſcertain the number of the enemy's ſlain; for, to uſe the words of the reporting officer, "Unleſs the ſwamps and rivers, in which they fell, were to report the killed, it was impoſſible to make a return of them." Major Butler, ſo frequently a troubleſome partizan officer on the frontiers, was killed by the Indians, as he was paſſing a river. Fifty-two priſoners were taken and brought in; and Major Roſs went off in a direction into the woods, where he and his troops muſt have ſuffered extremely for proviſions, &c.—Of the levies and militia with Col. Willet, 1 Lieutenant and 12 rank

and

and file were killed; 1 Captain, 2 Lieutenants, and 20 rank and file were wounded; 1 Captain, 1 Lieutenant, and 3 privates, miſſing. Thus were the deſigns of the enemy alſo fruſtrated in the north.

The Corporation of the city of Albany were ſo much impreſſed with the ſeaſonable and effectual exertions, made by our General, to ſave their city from deſtruction, that they ſent him the following very polite addreſs.

Albany, *October* 22, 1781.

"Sir,

"THREATENED as this city and the frontiers of the State have been, with deſtruction, from an enemy, who, forgetting the rights of humanity, and the cuſtoms of war, adopted by civilized nations, have hitherto waged it with all the ſpirit of the moſt ſavage barbariſm,—we cannot reflect but with pleaſure and gratitude on the alacrity with which you have purſued the intentions of the Commander in Chief, in affording with ſo much diſpatch a competent ſupport to oppoſe the enemy: permit us, therefore, to render you our unfeigned thanks, and to aſſure you that the Corporation of the city of Albany can never be unmindful of your attention; and we entertain not the leaſt doubt, but that ſimilar ſentiments influence every inhabitant who has experienced the advantage of your generous exertions.

We are, Sir, with the greateſt reſpect and eſteem, your moſt obedient, humble Servants.

By order of the Corporation,

(Signed) ABRA. TEN BROECK, *Mayor.*

The Hon. Maj. Gen. Heath."

31ſt.—The army in the Highlands, celebrated the glorious victory obtained over Lord Cornwallis. The whole army was under arms in one line; the artillery

artillery interſperſed with the brigades to which it was attached: at 12 o'clock, the army was reviewed by the General; at one, a grand *feu-de-joy* was fired; after which, all the officers dined together, at a table ſpread in the field, and formed a great ſquare, where great feſtivity and ſocial mirth prevailed. The ſoldiery had an extra boon on the occaſion; and, to crown the whole, in the midſt of the joy around the table, an officer approached our General, and informed him, that, at the requeſt of the priſoners in the provoſt, (who were pretty numerous) he was deſired to repreſent that their hearts expanded with joy on account of the glorious victory obtained by their illuſtrious Commander in Chief—that they lamented they could not expreſs it with their comrades in arms; but that they did it heartily in their confinement, and ſolicited the General's goodneſs in an order for ſomething to cheer their ſpirits. This was inſtantly done, with an additional order to the officer of the provoſt guard, to ſet every priſoner in confinement at liberty. The promulgation of this order drew a ſhout of approbation from the whole body of the officers at the table; and probably had a better effect on the diſcipline of the army, than a continuation of confinement, and exemplary puniſhment of the culprits, could have produced. The general order of the day directed, that, "As ſoon as the *feu-de-joy* is over, the arms, ammunition, &c. are immediately to be put in perfect order for inſtant action. All guards, pickets, and centinels to be vigilant and alert on their poſts;" which, notwithſtanding the joy of the day, was ſtrictly obſerved.

On this occaſion there were rejoicings in all parts of the United States: one inſtance ſeems to be worthy of notice; the company collected had determined to burn Gen. Arnold in *effigy*, for his treach-

ery at Weſt-Point; juſt as they were going to commit the effigy to the flames, one of the company obſerved, that one of Arnold's legs was wounded when he was fighting bravely for America, that this leg ought not to be burnt, but amputated; in which the whole company agreed; and this leg was taken off, and ſafely laid by.

November 3d.—At night, the eſcort with the ſouthern mail, who had put up at Col. Cooper's, in Clark's Town, were attacked by a gang of villains, who fired into the houſe, and killed the Serjeant dead on the ſpot, and wounded Capt. Champion, of Connecticut, who had put up at the ſame houſe, in the ſhoulder: the Corporal of the eſcort behaved well, threw the mail behind a bed, and defended the houſe—the aſſailants made off.

The ſame day, the foragers returned from below the lines, with a large quantity of forage, and two priſoners, taken near Col. Phillips's.

5th.—A Heſſian yauger came in, with his horſe and equipments complete.

7th.—Two deſerters came in from New-York; they left the city the evening before—they were very intelligent; by them it was learnt that the Britiſh fleet returned to Sandy Hook, the preceding Saturday was a week—that no action happened while they were at ſea—that the troops were diſembarked from the men-of-war, but remained on board the tranſports—that Gen. Sir Henry Clinton landed on Long-Iſland, and came acroſs to the city.

8th.—Intelligence was received from the northward, that the enemy did not eſtabliſh a poſt at Ticonderoga, but were returning towards Canada; and the militia which had been called out, were diſmiſſed. The Britiſh at New-York, at this time, wiſhed to ſtrike ſome of the poſts in the Highlands,

but

but did not attempt any of them. The army was short of flour, but amply supplied with meat.

About this time, our General received a letter from Gen. Washington, dated at York, (Virginia) October 27th, 1781; in which, among other things, the Commander in Chief observes: "There will be no occasion for forwarding on any more beef cattle, from the northward, for this army. Should there be a greater quantity of cattle sent from the New-England States, than the daily consumption of your army shall require, I would wish the surplus might be salted (if practicable) at some convenient place on the North River; otherwise, it will be necessary for you to give orders to the Agents and Commissaries, to prevent their sending more cattle than you shall have occasion for." This was the good fruit of the systematic arrangement.

12th.—Gen. Glover, with his own brigade, marched for the lines, in order to cover a grand forage.

13th.—Lieut. Deforester, of the Connecticut line, with 25 continental soldiers, and Capt. Lockwood, with 15 volunteers, including Lieutenants Hull and Mead, of the Connecticut State troops, took an armed sloop of 10 carriage-guns, with 25 soldiers on board. Lieut. Deforester, and those with him, behaved with great address and gallantry.

16th.—Brig. Gen. Glover returned from the grand forage; during the forage, one of the enemy was killed, and two taken prisoners; a quantity of corn, hay, &c. and about 40 swine, were brought off.

17th.—The 3d Massachusetts brigade moved to their ground of cantonment, south of the north redoubt, where they built their huts.

19th.—Admiral Digby remained at New-York, with seven sail of the line, five of 74, and two of 64 guns, two fifties, two frigates, one 20 gun ship, and two sloops of war; the remainder of the British fleet,

under

under the command of Admiral Greaves, failed from Sandy Hook the preceding Monday, for the Weſt-Indies; a great number of ſhipping, perhaps 300 ſail, were lying in New-York harbour; the enemy and inhabitants appeared much dejected.

20th.—Col. Tupper, with the 10th Maſſachuſetts regiment, a detachment of artillery, &c. arrived at Weſt-Point, from Albany.

23d.—The Connecticut line marched to their cantonment, back of Conſtitution Iſland, and the corps of artillery to Weſt-Point. The ſame day, Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling returned to the army, from Albany.

24th.—Our General removed his quarters from the Continental Village to Robinſon's Farm, for winter-quarters. The army in want of flour and forage.

28th.—The 1ſt Maſſachuſetts brigade moved to their cantonment, back of Weſt-Point.

December 2d.—The militia which had been called out for 3 months, were returning home. They had ſerved with much reputation, and done good ſervice for their country.

4th.—Capt. Sacket, of the New-York levies, near Harriſon's Purchaſe, below the lines, having gone a ſmall diſtance from his detachment, on the morning of the 2d, was taken priſoner by a party of the enemy. The enemy afterwards attacked Lieut. Moſher, to whom the command of the detachment fell; Lieut. Moſher and the detachment behaved with great bravery, repulſed the enemy, killed one of them and two horſes, and wounded eight of the enemy; among them a Capt. Kipp, ſaid mortally; Colonel Holmes and Capt. Kipp had their horſes killed under them. The levies had not a man killed or wounded.

The army were now buſily employed in building their huts, which they proſecuted with great expedition,

dition, and soon rendered them comfortable as to shelter; but many of the troops were in a most naked and distressed condition as to clothing; but relief was daily arriving from the eastward.

8th.—The officers and soldiers, who had been in Virginia, were now returning to the army. Some of the soldiers brought the small-pox with them.

12th.—The river was frozen down to Fishkill Landing.

The 13th was a general Thanksgiving Day; a large company of the officers of the army dined with our General.

24th.—The Clothier-General was issuing the new clothing to the regimental Pay-Masters—a most necessary piece of business. Congress about this time, by resolutions which they passed, called upon the Legislatures of the respective States, to complete their quotas of the army by the first of March ensuing, Congress being determined to push the late successes, until the enemy were driven from America. The preceding day, viz. the 23d, Capt. Williams, of the New-York levies, (stationed on the lines) with 25 volunteer horse, made an excursion to Morrissania, where they took and brought off prisoners, one Captain, one Lieutenant, and seven privates, of Delancy's corps, without the loss of a man. Capt. Williams conducted this enterprize with address and gallantry. Capt. Pritchard moved down with a detachment of continental troops, to cover the horse, if necessary; but the enemy did not come out.

26th.—Five deserters came in from Arnold's corps, with their horses, &c. complete: they were a patrole to a foraging party, near Col. Phillips's. An embarkation of troops was taking place at New-York, for Charleston and Savannah; Gen. Leslie having written, that without a reinforcement he could not maintain his posts.

27th.

27th.—Free Maſons celebrated the feaſt of St. John, &c.

31ſt.—The river was a little freed of the ice.—Thus cloſed the year 1781, a year which will be memorable in the annals of the United States of America, for the capture of Earl Cornwallis and his army—for ſeveral well-fought battles in the ſouth by Gen. Greene and the Britiſh, in that quarter—for the Count de Graſſe's having viſited our coaſt with the moſt formidable fleet ever before in theſe ſeas—and for general ſucceſſes on the American arms, under the ſmiles of Divine Providence, in every quarter. May the new year be rendered more auſpicious in the completion of the American warfare, and in the eſtabliſhment of the United States in the full acknowledgment of independence, peace and happineſs.

1782. *January* 1ſt.—A new mode of ſupplying the army by contract commenced, under the conduct of *Comfort Sands and Co.* contractors.

7th.—Nine ſoldiers had then died of the ſmall-pox: it was ſpreading, and it was determined to inoculate ſuch as had not had the diſtemper; which took place in the Connecticut line on the 11th.

11th.—Capt. Hunnewell, of New-York, with a number of volunteer horſe, covered by Maj. Treſcott, with a detachment of continental troops, made an excurſion to Morriſſania, took and brought off priſoners Capt. Totten, and three privates of Delancy's corps; it was the intent to have captured the Colonel, but he was abſent from his quarters. A party of the enemy's horſe collected and purſued Capt. Hunnewell, but they were checked by Major Treſcott, and no injury was ſuſtained.

14th.—It was learnt, that on the 4th, a fleet of 25 ſail of victuallers arrived at New-York from Cork, under

under convoy of the Quebec frigate; ten ſail more were left at Charleſton, where the whole touched.

16th.—The river was hard frozen again, and was paſſable on the ice, from Weſt-Point to Conſtitution Iſland. The ſame day, a ſerjeant and four dragoons came in from Arnold's corps, with ſix horſes and furniture complete. The ſixth dragoon would not come off, on which the others took from him his horſe, cloak, ſword, &c. They deſerted from a foraging party, and reported that a great part of the corps would deſert, when opportunity offered.

17th.—Three dragoons came in from Arnold's corps, with their horſes, &c. complete; and one priſoner taken by our guides, near Morriſſania, was ſent up.

18th.—Lieut. Hiwill, croſſing the river on the ice, fell through, but fortunately got out again.

19th.—It was communicated, that about the month of the preceding October, one ——— was offered two thouſand guineas to take Gen. Waſhington, and five hundred to take and bring in Gov. Read.

20th.—News was received, that the Marquis de Boullie, Governor of Martinico, had recaptured the Iſland of St. Euſtatia, where he made priſoners of 670 men. The Count De Graſſe, with 31 ſail of the line, had arrived at Martinico before the 6th of December. The Britiſh fleet from New-York had arrived at Barbadoes.

24th.—Some uneaſineſs having taken place on account of the iſſues of proviſions under the contract, the officers commanding brigades were ordered, on the part of the army, to endeavour an adjuſtment with the contractors, who went for the purpoſe.

28th.—A man and his horſe fell through the ice, near Weſt-Point; ſeveral ſoldiers lent their aſſiſtance, but in vain—both were drowned.

31ſt.

31ſt.—The whole of the troops who had not before had the ſmall-pox, were then under the operation of inoculation—their number near 2,000; ſeveral had died, but in general it was very favourable.

February 8th.—News was received, that the Duke de Lauzun, who carried to France the news of the capture of Earl Cornwallis, arrived in France in 23 days after he left the Cheſapeak; that there were great rejoicings in France on the occaſion, and alſo for the birth of a Dauphin.

10th.—The river had been paſſable on the ice for ſeveral days, at King's Ferry. On the preceding Thurſday, about 50 of Delancy's horſe came out within four miles of Shapequa, where they halted. On the 8th, they moved towards North-Caſtle, but turned off by Wright's Mills; from thence to King-ſtreet, and towards Horſeneck; they fell in with a ſmall guard of Gen. Waterbury's—killed one, and made four priſoners; they alſo took two or three inhabitants, plundered two houſes, and returned. About this time, a detachment from the Jerſey line made an attempt on the refugee poſt at Bergen, but were repulſed.

17th.—The King of England's ſpeech to his Parliament came to hand: this ſpeech was more moderate than any before had been, and an inclination to pacification was diſcernable.

20th.—Two deſerters came in from Arnold's corps, and alſo two Heſſians; ten had come in, during the courſe of two or three days.

21ſt.—The enemy were out towards Bedford. About this time, nine or ten thouſand ſtand of arms, and a large quantity of powder, brought from France by Col. Laurens, were brought from Boſton to Fiſhkill.

23d.—A detachment, conſiſting of 150 men, properly officered, under the command of Maj. Max-

well,

well, marched for Stamford, to cover that part of the country.

27th.—Col. Sumner arrived from Maſſachuſetts; he brought on about 2,000 ſuits of clothes for the army. The day before, a Mr. Dyckman, one of our guides on the lines, with 13 volunteer horſemen, made an excurſion to Morriſſania, took five priſoners of Delancy's corps, and five horſes; on their return, they were purſued by a party of the enemy's horſe, who coming rather too near, the brave volunteers faced about, charged vigorouſly, took one man priſoner with his horſe, and put the reſt to flight. The enemy again appeared in ſome force at a diſtance, but dared not to renew the attack. About this time, a fleet of tranſports ſailed from New-York to the ſouthward; it was conjectured to bring away troops.

March 3d.—The river was ſo freed of ice, that the General's barge croſſed to Weſt-Point. Two priſoners of war taken from Delancy's corps, were ſent up. Accounts from Maſſachuſetts announced an uneaſineſs among the people reſpecting the burden of taxes; and that there had been Conventions in the counties of Hampſhire and Berkſhire.

4th.—Capt. Hunnewell, with a body of volunteer horſe, backed by the infantry under the command of Maj. Woodbridge, made an excurſion to Morriſſania. The horſe proceeded down between the Britiſh fort No. 8, and the cantonment of Delancy's corps, and having turned the cantonments between day-break and ſun-riſe, they entered pell-mell. The enemy were completely ſurpriſed, and fled in every direction; ſome were cut down on the ſpot, others ſo badly wounded as not to be able to be removed. Some of the enemy availed themſelves of poſitions where the horſe could not aſſail them, from whence they began to fire on the horſe;

this occaſioned the firing of the alarm guns at No. 8. The horſe having nearly accompliſhed their deſign, moved off, taking the Eaſt-Cheſter road, on which Maj. Woodbridge had poſted the infantry in ambuſcade. Capt. Hunnewell had brought off one Subaltern and 20 men priſoners, and 20 horſes. The enemy in the vicinity collected a number of horſe, backed by light-infantry, and purſued Capt. Hunnewell until he came to Maj. Woodbridge. The enemy were drawn into the ambuſcade, who made one or two diſcharges on them, on which they broke and retired, but ſoon returned to the charge; ſkirmiſhing enſued, and continued to a conſiderable diſtance. Of the Americans, two privates were killed—Mr. Dyckman, one of the guides, a brave and active man, mortally wounded, and three privates ſlightly wounded.

The enemy at New-York were now contemplating means for their own defence, againſt the next campaign; and it was determined to open a canal and ſtrong lines from the Hudſon to the Eaſt River, at ſome diſtance from the city. The canal was to be deep and wide; 2,000 men were employed on the works on one day, 300 of whom were inhabitants. The ſame number were to be furniſhed daily. Theſe preparations were a defenſive ſhield for the time of approaching negociation; for from the debates and ſpeeches in the Britiſh Parliament, the olive-branch was evidently putting forth its buds.

10th.—Two ſoldiers, belonging to the 6th Maſſachuſetts regiment, having ſome words reſpecting their meſs, one of them ſtruck the other with his fiſt a blow on the head, and killed him dead on the ſpot. About the ſame time, an inhabitant, apprehending that ſome ſoldiers were about to rob his hen-rooſt, diſcharged a muſket out of a window, by which a ſoldier was killed.

13th.

13th.—Maj. Gen. Lincoln, Secretary at War, arrived at the army, on his way to Philadelphia.

At this time it was learnt, that on the 13th of the preceding December there were ſtrong debates in the Britiſh Houſe of Commons, reſpecting the carrying on the war in America. When Sir James Lowther made a motion, that the mode which had been purſued was ineffectual, many Members ſpoke for and againſt the motion; when it was put, there was againſt the motion, 220; for it, 179; majority, 41.

14th.—Lieut. Harris, with ſix men belonging to Capt. Vermille's company of militia, having obtained intelligence of a party of Delancy's corps being at a houſe near Mile-Square, had the addreſs to ſurpriſe the whole party, conſiſting of 12, killed one and made four priſoners.

21ſt.—A duel was fought at Weſt-Point, between Capt. —— and Lieut. ——, when the former was killed and the latter wounded: they fought with piſtols, at about ten feet diſtance. The Lieutenant abſconded.

25th.—News was received, that the Iſlands of St. Chriſtopher's and Nevis ſurrendered to the arms of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, on the 12th of the preceding February. The terms granted by the French commandants were truly noble, and reflect the higheſt honour on them.

26th.—About this time, putrid fevers were prevalent among the American troops, and in ſome inſtances proved mortal. About this time, an embarkation of about 800 troops took place at New-York; their deſtination not publickly known.

28th.—The whole army were ordered to be in readineſs for inſtant action, or to march to ſuch place or places, as might ſtand in need of aid. An additional company was ordered to the lines, and another

another to Smith's Clove, for the safety of the Commander in Chief, who was on his way from Philadelphia to Newburgh, and was to pass the Clove, on the succeeding Saturday or Sunday. News was received, that the citizens of London and Westminster had petitioned the King, in the strongest terms, to relinquish the American war.

29th.—Five deserters came in from Arnold's corps, with their arms, &c. complete. The enemy were busily employed on their canal and lines: a number of heavy cannon had been put on board ship, at New-York. About this time, the British cruisers were but too successful against the Americans, at sea. A ship of 18 guns, had, for some time, taken a station off Spitten-Devil Creek.

31st.—His Excellency Gen. Washington arrived at Newburgh; he had been absent from the main army since the 19th of the preceding August, having spent the winter at Philadelphia, after the capture of Earl Cornwallis.

April 2d.—Our General went up to Newburgh, to pay his respects to the Commander in Chief, where he dined, and returned at evening: Gen. Washington established his quarters at Newburgh. On the night of the 1st, a party of Capt. Pray's men, from the water-guard, being on shore, on the east side of the Hudson, fell in with a party of our own militia, who, in the dark, attacked each other; four of the latter were wounded, and eleven (being the whole of the party) were taken prisoners, before the mistake was discovered. An express, on his way from St. John's to New-York, with several letters, one in characters, had been taken.

4th.—The following [*extract*] was published in the general orders.

HEAD-QUARTERS,

HEAD-QUARTERS, NEWBURGH, *April 4th*, 1782.

"The Commander in Chief, having returned, and resumed the command of the main army, presents his thanks to Maj. Gen. Heath, and the troops which have been employed under his orders, for having preserved the important posts committed to his charge, and covered the country so successfully against the depredations of the enemy, during the absence of the General."

6th.—The Commander in Chief visited West-Point, and reviewed the first Massachusetts brigade. On his arrival at the Point, he was saluted by the discharge of 13 cannon.

8th.—Four deserters came in, three from the 42d British regiment, and a seaman from the ship Venger; this ship, stationed in the North River, mounted 24 guns, and had two gun-boats with her. The enemy continued at work on their canal and lines, which they were making very strong. An incredible number of fascines had been made, during the winter, on Long-Island and Staten-Island, strongly bound with eight bands; these were placed in the face of the work, with five pickets in each fascine.

9th.—The Commander in Chief reviewed the 3d Massachusetts brigade and 10th regiment, and dined with our General. The same day, two deserters came in from the ship in the river. The same night, an armed brig, and three boats, full of men, came up the Hudson, and came to anchor a little above the place where our guard-boats rendezvous, at Nyack; they were early discovered, and the alarm given. The soldiers landed at Haverstraw, about one o'clock on the morning of the 10th, and took 3 or 4 militiamen. It was supposed that their design was to have taken our whale-boats: they were refugees and sailors. Not knowing but this might have been a feint,

to

to an attack on the lines, 200 men were detached for their ſupport, if neceſſary. The enemy returned down the river, in the afternoon, having, in addition to the militia, above mentioned, taken two of Capt. Pray's men, who were out, burning coal, and two others who were over at Tarrytown, fiſhing, and deſtroyed ſome ſeines. It was learnt, from the northward, that the enemy were repairing and building boats at St. John's, and bringing up proviſions to that place; this rendered it probable, that the enemy would be troubleſome in that quarter, the enſuing campaign. Several parties of Indians had been ſkulking about, on the Mohawk River, had killed a ſoldier and a lad, and had taken a ſoldier priſoner, and burnt a building.

14th.—Three deſerters came in from Robinſon's corps; they made their eſcape from Long-Iſland, by croſſing the Sound in a canoe. They reported, that the enemy were under great apprehenſions of an attack, and were making every preparation for defence; that 62,000 faſcines had been made on Long-Iſland, during the winter and ſpring. A fleet of tranſports had arrived at New-York, from Charleſton. Lines were traced out on Long-Iſland, from the great fort to the marſh, near M'Gowen's mill-dam.

18th.—It was learnt, that the enemy had laid an embargo on the ſhipping at New-York. News was received, that Holland had formed an alliance with France, and that a Spaniſh fleet had arrived in the Weſt-Indies.

19th.—The General Officers, and officers commanding brigades and regiments, met at our General's quarters, in conſequence of orders from the Commander in Chief, to give an opinion what meaſures ought to be adopted, in conſequence of the horrid and brutal murder of a Capt. Huddy, who had commanded a block-houſe at Tom's River, in the Jerſies,

ſies, and had been taken priſoner by the enemy, and carried to New-York, where he was cloſely confined, under guard, and in the ſugar-houſe, and on board a veſſel, in irons, and then carried over to Bergen, in the Jerſies, and hanged by the refugees, a Capt. Lippincot directing the execution. This was done, under the pretence that Capt. Huddy had been concerned in the death of one Philip White, although White was killed by the guard, from whom he endeavoured to make his eſcape, and Capt. Huddy was at the ſame time a priſoner with the enemy. Huddy was left hanging on a tree, with the following label faſtened on his breaſt: "*Up goes Huddy for Philip White.*" This wanton and cruel act, ſo exaſperated the inhabitants of New-Jerſey, that they drew up a petition, ſigned by a vaſt number of reſpectable citizens, claiming of Gen. Waſhington, as the Military Guardian of their country, the obtainment of juſtice for this horrid act, or *retaliation* in caſe juſtice was refuſed. Indeed, painful as the idea of retaliation muſt be to the feelings of humanity, it ſeemed now to be the only preventative of more horrid murders. Gen. Waſhington, with his wonted prudence and talent for inveſtigation, free of all bias, ordered the officers to aſſemble as before mentioned, and directed our General to ſtate to them the occaſion of their being convened, and then the following queſtions: "Shall there be retaliation for the murder of Capt. Huddy? On whom ſhall it be inflicted? And how ſhall the victim be deſignated?" The officers aſſembled were forbidden to converſe on the queſtions ſubmitted to them, each one was to write his own opinion, ſeal it up, and addreſs it to the Commander in Chief. By this mode of procedure, all the influence which ſome officers might have on others was prevented, and the ſpontaneous feelings of every individual officer collected. Col. Humphries

phries and Col. Trumbull, of the General's family, attended the Council, and every direction of the Commander in Chief was moſt ſtrictly obſerved. It was found that the officers were unanimous in their opinion, that retaliation ought to take place; that it ſhould be inflicted on an officer of equal rank, viz. a Captain; not under convention or capitulation, but one who had ſurrendered at diſcretion; and that in deſignating ſuch an one, it ſhould be done by lot. The Commander in Chief was pleaſed to approve of the opinion of the officers, and wrote to the Britiſh commander, demanding juſtice for the wanton murder of Capt. Huddy; informing the Britiſh General at the ſame time, that if juſtice was not obtained, retaliation would moſt aſſuredly take place. At the ſame time, arrangements were put in train for retaliation; the names of ſeveral Britiſh officers, of equal rank and circumſtances, were thrown together, and a fair and impartial lot was drawn, when young Capt. *Aſgill* was taken; he was of a noble family, his father was dead, and on him were the fond hopes of his mother, Lady Aſgill, placed. Indeed a more affecting ſcene than this can ſcarcely open; an innocent young man, doomed to ſuffer for the wanton offence of another, which deed no doubt his ſoul deſpiſed; and the tender breaſt of a mother rent in twain on the fate of her darling ſon. Nor were the feelings of the Great WASHINGTON unmoved on this occaſion; they were too manifeſt not to be obſerved, and could only be curbed by the invariable reſolution, in every exigence, to exhibit the adminiſtrator of juſtice. It was months before this tragic buſineſs cloſed; and that the reader may have the whole narrative together, it will be carried forward to ſuch periods as will render a return back to the proper chain of events neceſſary.

Gen.

Gen. Sir Guy Carleton, who had come into the command in chief at New-York, wrote to Gen. Waſhington, aſſuring him of the fulleſt ſatisfaction.

Sir Guy ordered a Court-Martial for the trial of Capt. Lippencot, who was charged with the murder of Capt. Huddy. The Court-Martial had ſet, and given in their proceedings to Gen. Carleton, who wrote a letter to Gen. Waſhington, requeſting a paſſport for Chief Juſtice Smith, to repair to the head-quarters of the American army, in order to lay before the Commander in Chief the proceedings of the Court-Martial, with other documents, which he (Sir Guy) had no doubt would give full ſatisfaction.

Upon Gen. Waſhington's receiving the letter from Sir Guy Carleton, he informed our General that he ſhould not conſent to, or give a paſſport to Mr. Chief Juſtice Smith, to come up with the proceedings of the Court-Martial on Lippencot; but that he would ſend him (Gen. Heath) down to Col. Phillips's, near King's Bridge, to meet ſuch officer of equal rank, as Sir Guy Carleton might think proper to ſend out to meet him, with the proceedings of the Court-Martial, &c.; and on the 30th of July the Commander in Chief wrote to our General as follows:

HEAD-QUARTERS, *30th July*, 1782.

"DEAR SIR,

"FOR your information, and that you may know the object of your miſſion, I incloſe to you a tranſcript of my letter to Sir Guy Carleton, which is herewith committed to your care, to be forwarded as ſoon as poſſible.

"Before the time of your going to Phillips's houſe, I ſhall have the pleaſure of ſeeing you, or

conveying to you in writing my ſentiments more fully on the ſubject of your meeting.

With great regard, &c.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

(Copy.)

HEAD-QUARTERS, *July* 31*ſt*, 1782.

"SIR,

"IN reply to your letter of the 25th, I have to inform your Excellency, that Maj. Gen. Heath, ſecond in command, with two Aids-de-Camp, will have the honour of meeting an officer of equal rank, of your Excellency's appointment, at the houſe of Mr. Phillips, on the 5th day of Auguſt next. At that time Gen. Heath will receive from your officer the proceedings of the Court-Martial on Capt. Lippencot, for the murder of Capt. Huddy, together with ſuch other documents as you ſhall think proper to communicate.

"The aſſurance which your Excellency has given me, of the fulleſt ſatisfaction in this matter, is as pleaſing as it is intereſting.

"Your Excellency's propoſitions, contained in your letter of the 7th, have been communicated to Congreſs, and are now under the conſideration of that honourable body; as ſoon as I am favoured with their determination, your Excellency may be aſſured I will do myſelf the honour to communicate it.

I have the honour, &c.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Sir GUY CARLETON."

"By

"*By his Excellency George Washington, Esq. General and Commander in Chief of the forces of the United States of America.*

"To Maj. Gen. HEATH.

"SIR,

"HIS Excellency Sir Guy Carleton, having requested a passport for Chief Justice Smith, to repair to the head-quarters of the American army, in order to lay before me the proceedings of a Court-Martial, on the trial of Capt. Lippencot for the murder of Capt. Huddy, with other documents and explanations, which, *he says*, "he has no doubt will give full satisfaction :"

"I do, therefore, from an earnest desire to proceed with candour and deliberate justice, appoint you to meet an officer of equal rank, at the house of Col. Phillips, on Monday the 5th instant, or at any other time or place which you may think more convenient, for the purpose of receiving the proceedings and documents above mentioned, with such explanations *in writing* as he may think proper to communicate. The papers you shall receive, you will transmit to me as soon as your business is concluded, together with a report of your proceedings therein.

"Given at head-quarters, this 3d day of August, 1782.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

By his Excellency's command."

The following instructions accompanied the foregoing commission :

"To Maj. Gen. HEATH.

"SIR,

"HAVING desired you to meet an officer from Sir Guy Carleton, for the purpose mentioned in your appointment

appointment and authority, you will proceed to execute said business; in the course of which, you may inform the officer you meet, that, as I have no connexion with, or control over any person in the line in which Mr. Smith walks; as the question before us is in my opinion purely of a military nature, and reduceable to this single point, whether the perpetrator of the wanton and cruel murder of Huddy is to be given up, or a British officer to suffer in his place, that I could see no propriety or necessity in an interview with the Chief Justice.

"If you should find that the design of Sir Guy Carleton is to procrastinate this business, to envelope it in as much intricacy and difficulty as possible, or that he means to justify it by recrimination and law cases, thereby attempting to avert our purposes of retaliation, you may assure him, (unless you shall judge it expedient to leave me more at liberty) if not explicitly, at least by strong insinuation, that he will miss his aim; and that my deliberate and dispassionate proceedings in this case are intended to give him, as he now has had, full time to determine whether the guilty person or an innocent officer shall be made the subject of retaliation.

"You will be particularly cautious, that whatever passes in the conference you are to have, which is to be considered as official, be committed to writing, that no omissions or misconceptions may be plead hereafter; and you will inform the officer in explicit terms, if you find the matter is not likely to end as justice dictates and we could wish, that all oral conversation will be excluded from the official report of these proceedings now, or any share in the account of them hereafter, or the recital of them will be considered as unfair, and an evident departure from that line of rectitude which we wished to pursue, for an unbiassed world to judge by.

"If,

"If, notwithſtanding my letter to Sir Guy Carleton, requeſting his appointment of an officer of your rank to meet you on this buſineſs, he ſhould ſend Mr. Chief Juſtice Smith, you may, at your diſcretion, either receive the proceedings of the Court, and ſuch other documents as he is merely the bearer of, without going into any explanation with this gentleman, or refuſe the whole, as the circumſtances of the moment ſhall dictate to you. Or if this gentleman ſhould be an attendant on the officer aforementioned, you may refuſe to admit him at your conference. In the firſt caſe, you may either return with the proceedings, &c. or you may write Sir Guy Carleton, that you will wait a given time for an officer, agreeable to the purport of my letter to him of the 30th of laſt month.

"Given at head-quarters, Newburgh, Auguſt 3d, 1782.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON."

In the afternoon of the ſame day, our General received the following letter from the Commander in Chief:

HEAD-QUARTERS, *Auguſt 3d*, 1782.

"DEAR SIR,

"BY the contents of Sir Guy Carleton's letter, which came incloſed in your's of this day, I find it is unneceſſary for you to proceed to Phillips's houſe. Diſappointed in not obtaining a paſſport for Mr. Chief Juſtice Smith to come out, he will not, he ſays, trouble an officer of your rank to be the bearer of a bundle of papers only; but adds, they ſhall be ſent out in the ordinary courſe of conveyance. Your letter to Col. Trumbull, covering the new adopted ſyſtem of iſſues, &c. is received.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

Not

Not long after, the proceedings of the Court-Martial on Capt. Lippencot, for the murder of Capt. Huddy were ſent out; Lippencot was acquitted by the Court, and it appeared that the Britiſh Commanders in Chief, both Sir Henry Clinton, and Sir Guy Carleton, diſapproved the act. It ſeemed that a kind of Board of Directors who had a ſubordinate direction of the refugee operations, were ſome how concerned in this buſineſs, and that *argument* and ſome *artifice* were neceſſary to ſmooth it over. However, Gen. Waſhington, painful as his taſk was, was not to be diverted from juſtice or retaliation; but execution was ſuſpended. Lady Aſgill, learning the unhappy ſituation of her darling ſon, with much policy, and equal ſucceſs, applied to the Count de Vergennes, then Prime Miniſter of France, who ſpread the matter before the King and Queen: indeed it was a ſubject that needed no extra colouring to fix it on the mind of humanity. The King and Queen liſtened to the requeſt; and Congreſs was addreſſed in a repreſentation, that the French, as well as American arms, were victorious at York; and that the former ſeemed to have ſome ſhare in the priſoners; and hinted that it would be pleaſing to the French Court, if young Aſgill was pardoned—which Congreſs complied with: and although reparation for the wanton murder of Capt. Huddy was not fully obtained, yet it is highly probable, that the firm and determined conduct of Gen. Waſhington, on the occaſion, put a final ſtop to any further repetition of the kind.

Sir Guy Carleton was probably the greateſt General which the Britiſh had in America, during the war; and it was fortunate for the Americans, that he was ſo long kept within the limits of Canada. In him were combined many of thoſe great qualifications which form the General.

When

When Sir Guy visited the American prisoners in confinement in Canada, he addressed them with all the tenderness of a father; he observed to the young prisoners, that he did not blame them, it was the fault of the designing men of their country, that had led them into difficulty; that he would not hold them in confinement, but would send them home to their fathers and friends. See here the soothing art, that could not fail to cool the ardour of the young warrior in the cause of his country.

To Gen. Waterbury of Connecticut, when he shew him his commission, Sir Guy observed—"Your commission is from the proper authority of your Colony; (Connecticut had not changed her form of government) you are no rebel, Sir; you shall go home to your family."

Soon after Sir Guy Carleton came into the command at New-York, a Connecticut soldier, who had been a prisoner, came out to our army, and requested a pass to go home, informing that he had given a parole to Sir Guy, not to serve again, during the war; but he was ordered to join his regiment, which disappointed the soldier exceedingly. Gen. Washington ordered the Commissary of Prisoners to credit the British for one man exchanged; and informed Sir Guy that this practice would not be allowed. Many soldiers were at that time very uneasy in the American army—had a conduct of this sort been allowed, many soldiers on the out-posts and otherwise, might have gone to the enemy, have pretended they were taken, and have come out under parole, and have gone home, to the unspeakable injury of the army; but it was nipped in the bud—only one other having come out in the same way, before it was put a stop to.

We now return to take up the chain of events from which we digressed.

The

The 20th of April, two priſoners of war, taken near Kingſtreet, were ſent up by Major Oliver.

21ſt.—A Serjeant-Major deſerted and came out; he reported that an enterprize was contemplating at New-York, and a number of large boats were collecting at Turtle Bay.

24th.—Two deſerters came in from the Adamant man-of-war, of 50 guns, which lay in the Eaſt River, againſt New-York. Admiral Digby's flag was then hoiſted on board the Centurion. The ſeamen on board the ſhips very ſickly.

The latter end of April, the Duke of Cumberland packet, Capt. Daſhwood, arrived at New-York, in ſix weeks from England, with the March mail: by which it was learnt, that the debates in the Britiſh Parliament on the American war, grew more and more intereſting; that a motion had been made by Gen. Conway, for bringing in a bill, empowering the King to make peace with America.

The beginning of May, the Britiſh cruizers were very ſucceſsful againſt the Americans; eleven ſail of veſſels from Philadelphia were taken, and carried into New-York, with near 9,000 barrels of flour.

May 4th.—This evening exhibited the moſt extraordinary *aurora borealis* ever before ſeen by thoſe who obſerved it.

5th.—It was learnt, that the merchants of Edinburg, at a meeting on the 7th of the preceding January, declared and publiſhed their ſentiments and wiſhes for a peace with America, and a renewal of friendſhip. It was alſo further learnt, that it was the prevailing ſenſe of the Britiſh Houſe of Commons, as a firſt ſtep to an accommodation with America, to change the mode of carrying on the war, and to act only on the defenſive, on the Continent; and that the perſon who ſhould adviſe to offenſive operations againſt the Americans, ſhould be conſidered as

an

an enemy to the King and nation. At the ſame time, France and Holland appeared to be making great preparations for a vigorous campaign.

6th.—Symptoms of a dangerous mutiny were diſcovered in the Connecticut line; it had been conducted with ſo much addreſs, as to have been nearly matured before it was divulged. Under the preſſure of real or ſuppoſed grievances, the ſoldiers of the whole line had determined, at revelle the next morning, to have marched from their cantonment with arms, &c. complete, for Fiſhkill, were they were to take a number of field-pieces, and ſuch ammunition and proviſions as might be neceſſary, and then proceed to Hartford, and there demand of their new General Aſſembly that juſtice which they ſuppoſed was their due. Juſt as the officers were going to bed, a faithful ſoldier, who was waiter to an officer, came into his room, and told the officer that he could not go to reſt until he divulged to him an event which would aſſuredly take place the next morning, at break of day; and that every thing was then in readineſs for it—and laid open the whole ſecret. The matter was immediately communicated to the principal officers of the line, and ſeveral ſoldiers were ſeized and confined, and one ſuffered. The whole deſign was fruſtrated. Mutiny is a moſt horrid offence in an army, which, without ſtrict order and diſcipline, is but a rope of ſand. On the other hand, human nature can bear but to a certain degree, and no further; hence any trial of human nature, beyond ſuch a degree, is impolitic, and unjuſtifiable. Of this line, it may with ſtrict juſtice be ſaid, that their whole conduct through the war was highly meritorious.

7th.—A ſtop was put to the inoculation with the ſmall-pox.

8th.—A prifoner was ſent up, and a deſerter came in.

9th.—News was received, that there had been a total change of the Britiſh Miniſtry, and that Fort St. Philip, and the whole iſland of Minorca, ſurrendered to the Spaniards, on the 6th of the preceding February, by capitulation.

15th.—Eleven truſty Serjeants were ſent to Maſſachuſetts, to march on the recruits to the army from that State.

17th.—Two deſerters came in, who reported that a packet had arrived at New-York, from England.

24th.—Near 100 old and decrepid ſoldiers were collected from the different regiments, and many of them diſcharged. About this time, a packet arrived at Boſton, in 25 days paſſage from France; the letters were immediately forwarded to Congreſs.

26th.—The 1ſt Maſſachuſetts brigade was ordered to move out of its cantonment, and encamp near the German Huts.

The United States of Holland acknowledged the independence of the United States of America, the 28th of the preceding March.

There was a great talk of peace in New-York.

In the American army great preparations had for ſome time been making to celebrate the birth of the Dauphin of France. At leaſt 1,000 men a day were employed, under the direction of the engineers and other artiſts, in conſtructing a moſt ſuperb *arbor*, decorated with every emblem and device, deſcriptive of the occaſion, and the alliance between France and America, which ingenuity could invent; and perhaps for any thing of the kind, conſtructed in the field, was never ſurpaſſed.

31ſt.—The birth of the Dauphin of France was celebrated by the American army. An elegant dinner was provided, by order of the Commander in Chief;

Chief; of which the officers of the army, and a great number of ladies and gentlemen, invited from the adjacent country, partook. Thirteen toasts were drank, announced by the discharge of cannon. At evening there was a grand feu-de-joy, opened by the discharge of 13 cannon, three times repeated. The feu-de-joy, being fired in the dusk, had a pleasing appearance to the eye, as well as the ear; and was so ordered for that purpose. The army was not formed in line, but each brigade was drawn up in front of its own cantonment, or camp, on both sides of the river; and thus were in a circle of several miles circumference, in the centre of which, the Commander in Chief, and the spectators were placed. After the feu-de-joy, there was an exhibition of fire-works, &c.

June 2d.—Information was received, that the island of New-Providence, and its dependencies, were taken by the Spaniards, on the 11th of the preceding May. The garrison, which consisted of about 200 men, were sent to Europe. The new frigate South-Carolina, built in Europe, arrived about this time in the Delaware; she was an exceeding fine ship, mounting 28 42-pounders on one deck, and 12 12-pounders on her quarter and fore-castle. She was commanded by Commodore Gillon.

There had been a bloody engagement in the West-Indies, the 12th of the preceding April, between the Count De Grasse and Admiral Rodney; but all the accounts had been very vague. The British now published their account, and that they took from the French, the Ville de Paris, of 110 guns, and 1300 men; Le Glorieux, Le Cesar, and Le Hector, of 74 guns each; and Le Ardent, of 64 guns, and sunk one ship of the line. They acknowledged to have had 236 men killed, and 779 wounded; among whom were several officers. They also boasted of having

having obtained a very ſignal advantage in the European ſeas, over Admiral Kempelfelt.

5th.—It was reported, that a French fleet had been ſeen on the American coaſt. A fleet about this time ſailed from New-York, eaſtward, through the Sound, conjectured to be deſtined to Penobſcot. The brigades of the American army daily manœuvred, and fired to great acceptation.

14th.—The Britiſh had been removing a number of heavy cannon and ordnance ſtores from their works at the north end of New-York iſland, and placing light pieces in the room of them. A number of deſerters daily came in.

24th.—The Commander in Chief ſent the following letter to our General:

HEAD-QUARTERS, NEWBURGH,
June 24th, 1782.

"DEAR SIR,

"I AM this moment ſetting out for Albany, and ſhall be abſent a few days. I give you this information for the regulation of your own conduct; and requeſt, in the mean time, you will give me any intelligence you may receive, which you ſhall deem of ſufficient conſequence for communication by expreſs.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH.

26th.—It was learnt from Canada, that ſeveral armed veſſels and a number of batteaux, had come up Lake Champlain; there were probably about 300 men. A much larger force, (report ſaid 3,000) was gone or going towards Lake Ontario, to eſtabliſh a poſt at Oſwego.

27th.—Another ſhip came up the North River, and took a ſtation near Spitten-Devil Creek.

July

July 2d.—The Commander in Chief returned from Albany.

4th.—The army fired a grand feu-de-joy, it being the anniverſary of the Declaration of American Independence.

11th.—At evening, the Commander in Chief wrote our General the following letter:

HEAD-QUARTERS, *July 11th*, 1782.

"DEAR SIR,

"I HAVE this moment received a letter from Count de Rochambeau, (by one of his Aids, in 5 days from Williamſburg) informing me that he is on his way to Philadelphia; that he will be there the 13th or 14th, and wiſhes for an interview with me: for this purpoſe I ſhall ſet out in the morning, very early, and have only to requeſt your uſual attention.

(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

13th.—Two priſoners of war were ſent up, and three German deſerters came in, and the next day a light dragoon, with his horſe, &c. complete. About this time, the ſouthern mail was taken, between Philadelphia and Morriſtown.

18th.—It was learnt, that on the 21ſt of the preceding May, Gen. Wayne obtained a conſiderable advantage over the enemy, with very little loſs on his ſide, near Ogechee, in Georgia: the enemy retired into Savannah. About this time, a Corporal and 8 men deſerted from our block-houſe, at Dobb's Ferry.

21ſt.—Three deſerters came in. About this time, a fleet of about 40 ſail arrived at Sandy Hook, under convoy of two frigates; they were ſuppoſed to be from Ireland.

22d.—Three deſerters came in from the Britiſh grenadiers;

grenadiers; two others deserted at the same time, but had not got in. The same day, four deserters came in from the Hussar frigate, and the next day three soldiers. At this time the cow thieves and refugees were lurking in the Highlands, and detachments were sent out to patrol them.

26th.—Information was received, that a party of the enemy, to the number of 4 or 500, had appeared on the Mohawk River, advancing towards Fort Herkemer. They killed a continental soldier.

27th.—Gen. Washington returned to Newburgh from Philadelphia.

August 2d.—The British May and June packets had arrived at New-York. Admiral Barrington had taken a French man-of-war, of 74 guns, and several transports, destined for the East-Indies. The next day it was learnt, that a French fleet, consisting of 12 or 13 sail of the line, and 3 frigates, had arrived in the Chesapeak.

On the 29th ult. a bloody engagement took place off the Chesapeak, between the French frigate Amazon, of 36 guns, and the British frigate Margaretta, which terminated in favour of the latter.

6th.—Information was received, that the British had evacuated Savannah in Georgia.

8th.—Four deserters came in from the enemy.

10th.—The prospect of an approaching peace brightened; Gen. Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby informed Gen. Washington, that Mr. Grenville had gone over to France on the negociation for peace, and that the independence of America was to be acknowledged previous to, or as an opening of the negociation. The refugees at New-York were greatly alarmed at the prospect of peace. Sir Guy Carleton had notified the inhabitants to meet him; and, in Rivington's paper of the 7th, there appeared a proclamation, advising the refugees to continue

their

their loyalty, and make themſelves eaſy, until the event of the negociation was known.

12th.—A large ſtone magazine, capable of containing 1,000 barrels of gun-powder, was begun to be erected on Conſtitution Iſland; it was built upon the principles of Monſieur Vauban, and under the direction of Maj. Villefranche.

15th.—It was learnt, that the French fleet, which had been at the Cheſapeak, had arrived at Boſton. The Britiſh troops evacuated Savannah the 11th of July, leaving the town and works uninjured. Previous to the evacuation, the refugees ſent out to Gen. Wayne, to know if they might depend on protection in their perſons and property; they were anſwered in the affirmative, until they were delivered over to the civil authority, who, they were informed, muſt decide on their caſe. When the Britiſh left the town, near 200 of the inhabitants immediately entered the American ſervice in the Georgia battalion.

19th.—Three priſoners of war were ſent up; they were taken near Eaſt-Cheſter. Several deſerters came in about the ſame time.

22d.—The light-infantry of the American army moved down, and encamped near Peek's Kill.

24th.—Maj. Gen. Knox was in the general orders appointed to the command of Weſt-Point. The artillery, ſappers and miners, 10th Maſſachuſetts regiment, and the corps of invalids, for the garriſon.

From the 25th to the 27th, incluſive, 7 deſerters came in; they reported that the ſick of the Britiſh army were ordered to be ſent on board the hoſpital ſhips, and not to the hoſpitals on ſhore. The heavy baggage was alſo ordered to be put on board the ſhipping; the officers to retain on ſhore no more than what was of abſolute neceſſity.

29th.—An order of encampment and battle for the

the American army was publiſhed. The army was to encamp in one line, with a reſerve; the New-Jerſey and New-York troops were to form a diviſion under the command of Maj. Gen. St. Clair; the Connecticut troops, a diviſion under Maj. Gen. M'Dougal; theſe two diviſions to form the right wing, to be commanded by Maj. Gen. Gates: the New-Hampſhire brigade and firſt brigade of Maſſachuſetts, to form a diviſion under the command of Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling; the 2d and 3d Maſſachuſetts brigades, a diviſion under the command of Maj. Gen. Howe; theſe two diviſions, forming the left wing, under the command of Maj. Gen. Heath. The 2d Connecticut and 3d Maſſachuſetts brigades to form the reſerve; and when the ground would admit, form at 200 paces in the rear of the army. Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling was ordered to Albany to take the command of that part of his diviſion which was then in that quarter.

31ſt.—As many of the army as could be carried in the boats, embarked at their reſpective brigade landings; and the whole of the boats being formed in order, fell down the river to Verplank's Point, where the troops diſembarked and encamped. They made a moſt beautiful appearance, when in the boats and in motion. The remainder of the army marched down by land.

September 1ſt.—Information was received, that the Britiſh were on the eve of evacuating Charleſton, South-Carolina. The ſeaſon was remarkably dry, both to the eaſtward and ſouthward; it was with difficulty that the army could obtain a ſupply of water. About this time, an embarkation of Heſſian troops took place at New-York.

7th.—There was a grand review and manœuvre of the army, which gave great ſatisfaction. The July packet arrived at New-York about this time; it appeared

appeared that the Marquis of Rockingham had died, that Mr. Fox and Lord Cavendish had resigned their places, and that Lord Shelburne was appointed one of the Secretaries of State.

14th.—The American army was under arms to receive Gen. Count de Rochambeau; after his reception, the army defiled before him, and returned to their respective encampments. The French army was now arriving from the southward; they encamped to the South of Peek's Kill as they arrived.

16th.—The enemy made a grand forage near Volentine's Hill; Sir Guy Carleton was out in person, as was the young Prince. The covering party, it was said, consisted of 5 or 6,000 men; a number deserted. The American army at this time was in great want of forage, occasioned by the dry season.

18th.—The last of the French army arrived.

20th.—Gen. Washington reviewed the French army; the troops made a fine appearance. A French frigate had been run on shore in the Delaware, and taken by the enemy.

21st.—The American army manœuvred before the Commander in Chief, Gen. Rochambeau, and many other officers. The troops made a handsome appearance, and manœuvred well.

22d.—It was learnt, that the ships-of-war and transports, at New-York, were watering and preparing for sea, and a number of regiments were under orders for embarkation. A little before this time, Congress had authorized and empowered Gen. Washington to adjust and finally settle the accounts subsisting between the United States and the British government, respecting the support of the prisoners of war on both sides; and to provide, by a general cartel, for their greater comfort and exchange, under the great seal ratifying what he, the Commander in Chief of their army, should agree to.

Gen. Washington transferred this power to Major-Generals Heath and Knox, whom he appointed Commissioners for the purpose, and instructed them not to proceed to business, unless the British Commissioners were found to be equally empowered to bring the business to a final issue.

The time and place of meeting were agreed to by the two Commanders in Chief, and was to be on the 25th of September, at Tappan.

24th.—The American Commissioners sent down two of their Aids-de-Camp, to take up the necessary quarters, and make other preparations; and a company of light-infantry was ordered to Tappan, to furnish guards and centinels.

25th.—The American Commissioners embarked on board their barges, at King's Ferry, and fell down the river to Tappan Landing, where they arrived about 2 o'clock, P. M. In less than half an hour, the British Commissioners, in two vessels, wearing flags, came up the river, and cast anchor off the Landing. The American Commissioners waited at the shore, and sent off their barges to aid, in bringing the British Commissioners on shore, the river being at that time very rough: on their reaching the shore, it was found that Lieut. Gen. Campbell and the Hon. Mr. Elliot, who had been Lieut. Governor of New-York, were the Commissioners on the part of the British. The whole dined together, an elegant dinner having been ordered by the American Commissioners, and politeness and great sociability took place; and a mutual arrangment for the daily support of the table, was agreed on, as it was expected that the business would not be completed in less than three or four weeks, if the whole object was adjusted.

26th.—The Commissioners interchanged copies of their respective powers; these were to be consider-

ed

ed until the next day, when anſwers were to be given in writing, whether the powers were ſatisfactory on both ſides. On examining the powers, given to the Britiſh Commiſſioners, it appeared that their doings would not be concluſive, until confirmed, and were very ſhort of thoſe held by the American Commiſſioners, whoſe agreement and ſignature were to be final.

27th.—The American Commiſſioners ſtated to the Britiſh Commiſſioners, that the powers with which they were veſted were inadequate to effect the expectations of the government of the United States, and that therefore the negociation muſt be broken off. Of the great difference of the powers, the Britiſh Commiſſioners were fully convinced. The American Commiſſioners thought it to be their duty, when they gave their note of objections to the Britiſh delegated powers, to hand with it a very pointed proteſt, in behalf of the United States, againſt that conduct, on the part of the Britiſh, which had ſo long delayed the ſettlement of the accounts for the ſupport of the priſoners of war, which were in the power of the United States. The Commiſſaries of Priſoners, on both ſides, were preſent, to preſent and ſupport their reſpective accounts; and a ſettlement would not only have been juſt, but alſo very intereſting to the United States.

28th.—About 12 o'clock, at noon, the Commiſſioners parted with the ſame politeneſs and good-humour with which they met, and which had invariably continued during the time they were together. Our General ſent orders to the commanding officer at Dobb's Ferry, to permit the Britiſh flags to paſs down the river; and the American Commiſſioners returned to camp. The day before, (the 27th) Gen. Waſhington, covered by the dragoons and light-infantry, reconnoitred the grounds on the eaſt ſide of the

the river, below the White-Plains; and the 29th, about noon, returned to camp.

October 3d.—It was learnt, that the enemy had evacuated Lloyd's Neck, and deſtroyed their works at that place: their works at Bergen Point, in the Jerſies, had been deſtroyed before that time.

5th.—Maj. Gen. Gates arrived at camp. At this time, the horſes of the army were ſuffering for want of forage.

6th.—Intelligence was received from the ſouthward, that on the 27th of Auguſt, Col. Laurens was killed, in a ſkirmiſh with the enemy: the loſs of this brave young officer was much regretted. The enemy, previous to their leaving Charleſton, deſired to purchaſe ſome proviſions; and Gen. Leſlie had intimated to Gen. Greene, that if this could not be permitted, he muſt take the proviſions by force. The former being denied, the latter was attempted, and Col. Laurens fell; 24 or 25 others were killed, wounded, or taken priſoners, and one howitzer fell into the hands of the enemy.

7th.—Intelligence was received, that Maj. Gen. Lee had died, a little before, at Philadelphia; he had juſt before ſold his eſtate, in Virginia, for £6,100 ſterling.

8th.—The weather beginning to grow cold and blowing, all the bowers (which were numerous and very ſalutary, during the hot ſeaſon) were ordered to be pulled down and removed, to prevent accidents by fire, and to admit the benefit of the ſun.

12th.—Intelligence was received from Europe, by the arrival of a veſſel in 34 days from Amſterdam, that the negociation for peace was going on, and that additional Miniſters and Envoys had gone to attend; that the combined fleets were all in port; that the ſiege of Gibraltar was continued; and that there had been an obſtinate engagement in the Eaſt-

Indies,

Indies, between the French and Engliſh fleets, in which both fleets had ſuffered much, but no ſhips were taken by either ſide. The inſurrection in South-America had been quelled.

15th.—A new contract, for ſupplying the army with proviſions, under Meſſrs. Wadſworth and Carter, took place.

16th.—A grand manœuvre was performed by eight picked battalions, preparatory to a grand review, which was to be the next day.

On the 19th (ſeveral preceding days having been ſtormy) the grand manœuvre was performed, by the eight picked battalions. The evolutions and firings were performed with regularity and exactneſs, much to the credit of the troops, and general ſatisfaction of the numerous ſpectators of the American and French armies.

20th.—The Secretary at War arrived at camp. The enemy were demoliſhing their works at No. 8, Morriſſania. Intelligence was received, that the beſiegers of Gibraltar had made a nearer approach to the place, and were playing upon it with 200 pieces of artillery.

22d.—The firſt diviſion of the French army moved eaſtward; they were to halt at Hartford, in Connecticut, where the whole were to rendezvous. The American army was put under orders, to be ready to move on the ſhorteſt notice. The Auguſt packet, from England, arrived at New-York the day before.

24th.—The whole American army manœuvred before the Hon. the Secretary at War. The Commander in Chief, in the orders of the day, expreſſed his own, as well as the Secretary at War's fulleſt approbation.

26th.—At revelle, the left wing of the American army, under the command of our General, ſtruck

their

their tents, and marched from the encampment, as far as the wood, near the north redoubt, in the Highlands, where they remained during the night; the day and night were rainy, and the troops had no covering but the heavens.

27th.—The troops croſſed the Hudſon in boats to Weſt-Point, the whole having croſſed by half paſt 12 o'clock. In the afternoon, the troops took up their line of march, and aſcended Butter-Hill, a tedious march, and halted and paſſed the night on the northern deſcent of the hill, in the open field.

28th.—At 7 o'clock, A. M. the troops reſumed their march from Butter-Hill, and reached the ground on which they were to build their huts, in New-Windſor, at about half paſt 10 o'clock, A. M. Upon this ground, and its vicinity, the army paſſed the enſuing winter. The cantonment, for its nature and kind, was regular and beautiful. Upon an eminence, the troops erected a building, handſomely finiſhed, with a ſpacious hall, ſufficient to contain a brigade of troops on Lord's days, for public worſhip, with an orcheſtra at one end; the vault of the hall was arched; at each end of the hall were two rooms, conveniently ſituated for the iſſuing of the general orders, for the ſitting of Boards of Officers, Courts Martial, &c. and an office and ſtore for the Quarter-Maſter and Commiſſary's departments. On the top was a cupola and flag-ſtaff, on which a flag was hoiſted occaſionally, for ſignals, &c. In this cantonment the army ſpent the winter very comfortably, and it proved to be their laſt winter-quarters.

30th.—It was learnt, that on the 26th or 27th, fourteen Britiſh men-of-war, of the line, one 44 gun ſhip, ſeven frigates, three large tranſports, and ten or twelve brigs and ſchooners, ſailed from New-York, it was conjectured for the Weſt-Indies. They were obſerved to ſail nearer under Long-Iſland than uſual,

uſual, and came too, near the place where Gen. Howe landed in the year 1776, where it was conjectured troops now embarked.

On the 7th of the preceding Auguſt, Congreſs paſſed reſolutions, directing the Secretary at War, on or before the 1ſt day of January following, to cauſe the non-commiſſioned officers and privates, belonging to the lines of the ſeveral States, to be arranged in ſuch manner as to form complete regiments, agreeable to the acts of Congreſs of the 3d and 21ſt of October, 1780, of regiments of not leſs than 500 rank and file, the junior regiments to be drafted to fill the ſenior regiments. The regiments ſo formed, to be completely officered; the officers to agree and determine who ſhould ſtay in ſervice; or if this could not be effected by agreement, the juniors who were ſupernumerary of each grade were to retire, retaining their rank, and be entitled to the emoluments to which the officers were entitled, who retired under the reſolutions of the 3d and 21ſt of October, 1780. In conſequence of theſe reſolutions, the Commander in Chief, on this day, (30th of Oct.) ordered the regiments of the Maſſachuſetts line to be reduced to 8 regiments, of 500 rank and file each, or as near as could be to that number; and the Connecticut line to 3 regiments of ſimilar ſtrength, with 3 Field Officers, 9 Captains, 19 Subalterns, 1 Surgeon, and 1 Mate each; and the regiments were formed accordingly.

November 1ſt.—It was learnt from Europe, that the Royal George, a firſt-rate Engliſh man-of-war, of 110 guns, had been overſet near Spithead, by a ſudden flaw of wind, as ſhe lay heeled to repair a leak on the other ſide; that ſhe ſunk in about 8 minutes, having on board 12 or 1300 ſouls, about 900 of whom periſhed.

5th.

5th.—Our General left the army, and commenced his journey to the eaſtward, and arrived at his houſe in Roxbury on the 11th.

12th.—There was a tranſit of Mercury over the north-weſt limb of the ſun's diſk. The preceding week, one of the French men-of-war, in Portſmouth harbour, (N. H.) was ſtruck by lightning, and her foremaſt damaged. The French army were now on their march towards Boſton.

The America, a fine new 74 gun ſhip, the firſt of her rate built in the United States, and which had not long before been preſented by Congreſs to his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, was launched at Portſmouth on Tueſday the 5th inſtant.

18th.—The field artillery of the French army reached Boſton. The ſame day it was reported, that the Britiſh troops had left Charleſton, South-Carolina.

21ſt.—The French diſcharged their artillery horſes, to the number of ſeveral hundreds.

27th.—Intelligence was received from Spain, that the Britiſh had relieved Gibraltar, and taken a Spaniſh 70 gun ſhip; ſeveral of their gun-boats were alſo deſtroyed. Had Spain long before this given over the ſiege of Gibraltar, and employed her naval and land forces againſt the Britiſh in ſome quarter more vulnerable, ſolid advantages might have accrued, much money and many lives have been ſaved.

28th.—General Thankſgiving throughout the United States. The French fleet, under the command of the Marquis de Vaudreuil, was at this time in Nantaſket Road, except a few ſhips which were at Portſmouth, New-Hampſhire.

December 2d.—Maj. Gen. Baron Viominel, commander of the French army, (Count de Rochambeau not coming this way) arrived at Boſton from Providence. The troops were coming forward in diviſions,

ſions, at one day's march diſtance from each other. The firſt diviſion arrived at Boſton on the 5th, in the morning.

6th.—In the morning, a ſhip lying in Boſton harbour, laden with maſts, deſtined to the Weſt-Indies, by ſome accident took fire, and burnt down to the water's edge; the loſs was very conſiderable. Advice was received from Europe, that the Commiſſioners, for ſettling peace, were ſitting at Paris; that matters were in forwardneſs; ſeveral articles had been agreed to, &c. A reinforcement of French ſhips and troops had arrived in the Weſt-Indies from France. This day the laſt diviſion of the French troops reached Boſton. Theſe troops embarked on board the men-of-war, were much crowded, and in danger of growing ſickly, if continued long on board. About this time, the American officers had been very uneaſy reſpecting their great arrears of pay, &c.; and ſoon after addreſſed Congreſs on the ſubject, and appointed a Committee from the army to preſent their petition and ſupport it.

11th.—The town of Boſton preſented an addreſs to the French General and officers.

22d.—The French fleet had all fallen down below the Caſtle, and were in readineſs to proceed to ſea. The markets were at this time extremely high; flour at 8 and ſome at 9 dollars per hundred; butter was ſold at 2*s.* 4*d.* per pound, &c.

24th.—His moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's fleet, under the command of the Marquis de Vaudreuil, came to ſail in King and Nantaſket Roads, and went out to ſea, having the army under the command of Gen. Viominel on board. The fleet was firſt to ſtand to the northward, until it was joined by the ſhips from Portſmouth; they were then to tack and ſtand to the ſouthward, and take with them the Fantaſque,

armed en-flute from Rhode-Iſland, and proceed to the Weſt-Indies.

25th.—It was learnt, that near 3,000 refugee inhabitants had gone from Charleſton, South-Carolina, to Jamaica, and about the ſame number to Auguſtine. The exorbitant prices of proviſions fell immediately after the ſailing of the French fleet.

26th.—Authentic accounts were received from Europe, that Monſieur de la Perreuſe, in the ſhip Sceptre, with two frigates, had returned to France, from a ſucceſsful enterprize againſt the Britiſh ſettlements in Hudſon's Bay, having entirely deſtroyed the eſtabliſhments and property of the Engliſh on that coaſt, eſtimating the damage at ten millions of livres.

31ſt.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh homeward-bound Weſt-India fleet, on their way to England, met a violent ſtorm, in which two 74 gun ſhips, the Ramillies and the Centaur, were ſaid to have foundered; and that a number of the merchantmen had been taken by French and American cruizers, and carried into France—that four prizes had been taken by the American frigate Alliance, Capt. Barry, having 1,200 hhds. of ſugar, and 400 hhds. of rum on board.

1783. *January* 1ſt.—Intelligence was received, that a terrible fire happened in the city of Conſtantinople, in the month of the preceding Auguſt, in which a large part of the city was conſumed, and about 5,000 lives loſt. The fire was ſuppoſed to have been kindled by the malefactors, in ſix different places.

4th.—Intelligence was received, that Great-Britain had acknowledged the Independence of the United States, collectively and ſeverally; and that a commiſſion had been ſent to Mr. Oſwald, one of the

the Britiſh Commiſſioners at Paris, to treat with the American Commiſſioners accordingly.

Some further accounts of the terrible fire in Conſtantinople, ſtated that near 200,000 inhabitants were burnt out of their habitations—that the fire continued to burn ſixty-two hours, and at ſome times with a front a mile in width.

8th.—Intelligence was received, that the Charleſton man-of-war, belonging to the State of South-Carolina, a remarkable fine ſhip, commanded by Commodore Gillon, was taken by the Britiſh, and carried into New-York.

In this month, the inhabitants of Maſſachuſetts, in their ſeveral religious ſocieties, made voluntary contributions to the inhabitants of the town of Charleſtown, to enable them to rebuild a meeting-houſe, in the room of that which was deſtroyed by fire, by the Britiſh troops, during the battle of Bunker's Hill, on the 17th of June, 1775.

24th.—News was received, that Maj. Gen. Lord Sterling had lately died at Albany; he was a brave officer in the American army.

25th.—Intelligence was received, that the Britiſh troops left Charleſton, in South-Carolina, the 14th of the preceding December, and the Bar the 17th; and that Gen. Greene had taken poſſeſſion of the city. It had been previouſly agreed, that the Americans would not moleſt the Britiſh in quitting the place; and on their part, they were not to injure the city.

28th.—It was learnt, that Gen. Clarke had been very ſucceſsful againſt the Shawaneſe Indians, and had deſtroyed a number of their towns. From Europe it was learnt, that although there was the greateſt proſpect of peace, yet all the powers at war were ſtraining every nerve to be prepared for the opening of the next campaign. The damage ſuſtained by the

the Britiſh homeward bound Weſt-India fleet, was greater than at firſt ſuppoſed; among the diſabled ſhips was the Ville de Paris, of 110 guns, and ſeveral others.

29th.—A prize ſhip, taken by Capt. Manly, arrived in Boſton harbour, having about 1,800 barrels of proviſions on board.

February 5th.—News was received, that the Britiſh had reinforced the garriſon at Penobſcot—that the whole garriſon conſiſted of nearly 900 men—that a further reinforcement was expected—and that the Britiſh were endeavouring to extend their influence in that quarter.

6th.—Intelligence was received, that a number of loyaliſts had gone from New-York to Nova-Scotia; that Gov. Franklin, in England, had written to his friends in New-York, that peace would certainly take place. About this time, the articles of a treaty of amity and commerce, between the United States of America and Holland, was publiſhed by Congreſs. In the month of the preceding December, Congreſs paſſed a ſpirited reſolution, reſpecting the conduct of the government of Vermont; and about this time, the Council of Vermont preſented to Congreſs a remonſtrance againſt the reſolution, as interfering with their internal police.

About this time, Gen. Waſhington and Gen. Sir Guy Carleton had an interview on the lines of the two armies.

20th.—Intelligence was received, that Don Solano, with ten ſail of Spaniſh men-of-war, had arrived at the Havannah, and that the Count D'Eſtaing had arrived, with a French fleet, at Martinico; that an attack on the iſland of Jamaica was ſoon expected to take place; in conſequence of which, ſeven Britiſh regiments were to go from New-York to the Weſt-Indies. The refugees at New-York were ſelling off

their

their effects at auction, and preparing for a ſudden removal to Nova-Scotia.

21ſt.—The Britiſh King's ſpeech, to his Parliament, appeared in a hand-bill. The ſpeech breathed reconciliation throughout. The King informed his Parliament, that he had gone the utmoſt lengths the power granted to him would allow; and that he hoped ſoon to lay before them the articles of peace, which were in great forwardneſs, and ſuch as he apprehended they would approve. That he hoped the two countries would ſtill be in friendſhip,—that religion, language, intereſt, &c. urged this,—that he devoutly prayed Great-Britain might not experience any of thoſe calamities, which might be feared from ſuch a diſmemberment of the Empire; and then extends ſome compaſſionate expreſſions to America. Alas, O King! it might have been happy for both countries, if a due conſideration had been early exerciſed; then might much blood and much treaſure have been ſaved. Let it be a warning to other nations, to be wiſe and juſt! Nature will have her own way, and do her own work in her own time. America of courſe would be independent and ſovereign; but a miſtaken policy in Great-Britain, hurried on an event to her own loſs, long before nature had ripened it for her own conſummation. The public expectation now was high, and the period when peace ſhould be announced ſuppoſed to be even at the door, and divers premature accounts were at different times circulated.

25th.—It was learnt, that Lieut. Col. Barber, of the New-Jerſey line, had a little before been killed, together with his horſe, near the army, by the unexpected fall of a tree, which a ſoldier was cutting. By this event a brave officer and valuable citizen was loſt, who had frequently diſtinguiſhed himſelf in action; his fall, therefore, in this manner, and

at

at the very graſp of the harveſt of his toils, were rendered the more affecting.

27th.—Intelligence was received from Virginia, that the Houſe of Delegates of that State had recommended to their conſtituents, not to chooſe into places of power and truſt, men who had not been attached to the cauſe of liberty, and only ſuch as had given early and decided proof of their friendſhip.

28th.—It was found, that the Britiſh cruizers, from New-York, had lately taken a number of American veſſels, among them ſeveral from Boſton to Virginia.

March 3d.—Accounts were received from Europe, that in an aſſault made by the Spaniſh troops on the garriſon of Gibraltar, in the month of September, the beſieged, with their cannon loaded with grape-ſhot, made great havock among the aſſailants, but that this did not check their ardor; but that upon a near approach to the walls, they were ſtopped, and thrown into great confuſion by ſeveral engines, throwing ſcalding water upon them. Some were ſcalded almoſt to death, and others had their eyes put out—a new mode of defence, but a powerful one.

6th.—Intelligence was received, that not long before, the French frigate Sibill had been taken by ſome of the Britiſh cruizers, and carried into New-York.

20th.—It was learnt from Philadelphia, that the Waſhington packet, Capt. Barney, had arrived at that place from L'Orient in France, which place ſhe left the 17th of January. The public diſpatches brought by this veſſel, although they did not announce a peace to be concluded, yet informed that the negociations were going on; every thing was ſettled between America and Great-Britain, and matters look-

ed

ed favourable towards France; but difficulties were ſubſiſting between Great-Britain, Spain and Holland. Several of the out-lines of the articles of the treaty, between Great-Britain and the United States of America, were publiſhed, and in general were thought to be favourable to the latter. The ſame packet brought diſpatches for Gen. Sir Guy Carleton and Admiral Digby, which were forwarded to New-York.

22d.—It was learnt, that a great uneaſineſs had diſcovered itſelf in the American army, on account of the great arrears of pay which was due, and ſome doubting apprehenſions as to the real intention of the public to fulfil their promiſes to the army, and in particular that of half pay. An anonymous notification, and two addreſſes to the officers, made their appearance about ten days before, couched in very firm and decided language; theſe produced an addreſs from the Commander in Chief, a meeting of the officers, a repreſentation to Congreſs, and their reſolutions reſpecting the army at that time.

The evening of the 28th, a letter was received from Philadelphia, purporting that a veſſel had arrived there from Europe, with the intelligence, that the preliminary articles of peace were ſigned on the 20th of the preceding January. Hoſtilities were to ceaſe in Europe the 20th of February, and in America on the 20th of this month. The public diſpatches had not now arrived, but were momently expected.

April 2d.—It was learnt, that a very valuable prize was carried into Salem.

7th.—Our General ſat out from his houſe in Roxbury, and arrived at the head-quarters of the American army at Newburgh, on Hudſon's River, on the 14th, in the forenoon.

On

On the 16th, in the general orders of the day, our General was directed to take the immediate command of the army, during the abſence of Maj. Gen. Gates. Congreſs had publiſhed their proclamation ſuſpending hoſtilities.

18th.—The Commander in Chief addreſſed the army on the happy ceſſation of hoſtilities as follows:

"The Commander in Chief orders the ceſſation of hoſtilities between the United States of America and the King of Great-Britain, to be publickly proclaimed to-morrow at 12 o'clock, at the New Building; and that the Proclamation which will be communicated herewith, be read to-morrow evening, at the head of every regiment and corps of the army; after which, the chaplains, with the ſeveral brigades, will render thanks to Almighty God for all his mercies, particularly for his over-ruling the wrath of man to his own glory, and cauſing the rage of war to ceaſe amongſt the nations.

"Although the Proclamation before alluded to, extends only to the prohibition of hoſtilities, and not to the annunciation of a general peace, yet it muſt afford the moſt rational and ſincere ſatisfaction to every benevolent mind, as it puts a period to a long and doubtful conteſt—ſtops the effuſion of human blood—opens the proſpect to a more ſplendid ſcene—and, like another morning-ſtar, promiſes the approach of a brighter day than hath hitherto illuminated this weſtern hemiſphere! On ſuch a happy day—a day which is the harbinger of peace—a day which completes the eighth year of the war, it would be ingratitude not to rejoice: it would be inſenſibility not to participate in the general felicity.

"The Commander in Chief, far from endeavouring to ſtifle the feelings of joy in his own boſom, offers his moſt cordial congratulations on the occaſion, to all the officers of every denomination—to all the

the troops of the United States in general, and in particular to thoſe gallant and perſevering men who had reſolved to defend the rights of their invaded country ſo long as the war ſhould continue; for theſe are the men who ought to be conſidered as the pride and boaſt of the American army, and who, crowned with well-earned laurels, may ſoon withdraw from the field of glory to the more tranquil walks of civil life.

"While the General recollects the almoſt infinite variety of ſcenes through which we have paſſed with a mixture of pleaſure, aſtoniſhment and gratitude—while he contemplates the proſpects before us with rapture,—he cannot help wiſhing that all the brave men, of whatever condition they may be, who have ſhared in the toils and dangers of effecting this glorious revolution, of reſcuing millions from the hand of oppreſſion, and of laying the foundation of a great empire, might be impreſſed with a proper idea of the dignified part they have been called to act (under the ſmiles of Providence) on the ſtage of human affairs; for happy, thrice happy, ſhall they be pronounced hereafter, who have contributed any thing, who have performed the meaneſt office in erecting this ſtupendous *fabric of Freedom and Empire*, on the broad baſis of independency; who have aſſiſted in protecting the rights of human nature, and eſtabliſhing an aſylum for the poor and oppreſſed of all nations and religions.

"The glorious taſk for which we firſt flew to arms, being thus accompliſhed—the liberties of our country being fully acknowledged and firmly ſecured, by the ſmiles of Heaven on the purity of our cauſe, and the honeſt exertions of a feeble people, determined to be free, againſt a powerful nation diſpoſed to oppreſs them; and the character of thoſe who have perſevered through every extremity of hardſhip, ſuf-

fering, and danger, being immortalized by the illuſtrious appellation of the *Patriot Army*,—nothing now remains but for the actors of this mighty ſcene to preſerve a perfect, unvarying conſiſtency of character through the very laſt act; to cloſe the drama with applauſe; and to retire from the military theatre with the ſame approbation of angels and men, which have crowned all their former virtuous actions.

"For this purpoſe, no diſorder or licentiouſneſs muſt be tolerated; every conſiderate and well-diſpoſed ſoldier muſt remember it will be abſolutely neceſſary to wait with patience, until peace ſhall be declared, or Congreſs ſhall be enabled to take proper meaſures for the ſecurity of the public ſtores, &c. As ſoon as theſe arrangements ſhall be made, the General is confident there will be no delay in diſcharging, with every mark of diſtinction and honour, all the men enliſted for the war, who will then have faithfully performed their engagements with the public. The General has already intereſted himſelf in their behalf; and he thinks he need not repeat the aſſurances of his diſpoſition to be uſeful to them on the preſent, and every other proper occaſion. In the mean time, he is determined that no military neglects or exceſſes ſhall go unpuniſhed, while he retains the command of the army.

"The Adjutant-General will have ſuch working-parties detailed to aſſiſt in making the preparation for a general rejoicing, as the Chief Engineer, with the army, ſhall call for; and the Quarter-Maſter-General will alſo furniſh ſuch materials as he may want. The Quarter-Maſter-General will, without delay, procure ſuch a number of diſcharges to be printed as will be ſufficient for all the men enliſted for the war; he will pleaſe to apply to head-quarters for the form.

"An

"An extra ration of liquor to be iſſued to *every* man to-morrow, to drink perpetual peace, independence, and happineſs to the United States of America."

In the afternoon of the 18th, a ſchooner, —— Cottle, maſter, from Nantucket, with fiſh, oil, rum, &c. came up the Hudſon, to Newburgh. This was the firſt American veſſel which had come up the river, ſince the Britiſh took poſſeſſion of New-York, in the year 1776.

19th.—At noon, the Proclamation of the Congreſs, for a ceſſation of hoſtilities, was publiſhed at the door of the New Building, followed by three huzzas; after which, a prayer was made by the Rev. Mr. Ganno, and an anthem (*Independence*, from Billings) was performed by vocal and inſtrumental muſic. The ſame day, Gen. Waſhington went for Ringwood, to meet the Secretary at War, on ſome buſineſs of importance.

20th.—At evening, the Commander in Chief returned to head-quarters.

21ſt.—Permiſſion was given for ſuch perſons as might chooſe it, to go to New-York, with proviſions, &c. A veſſel was loading with flour, to go down the river; and one laden with rum, porter, cheeſe, beef, &c. &c. came up from New-York. Thus, as we have ſeen how the rage of war came on, we now ſee how by degrees that rage ſubſided, until the *olive* ſprang up and progreſſed to full bloom.

24th.—It was learnt from Europe, that on the 5th of February, preceding the Bedford, Capt. Morris, made entry at the cuſtom-houſe in London, being the firſt veſſel that had arrived in the river, belonging to the United States.

26th.—It was learnt that the refugees were embarking, in order to leave New-York; and many tranſports were falling down to the watering-place.

About

About this time, Congreſs recommended an impoſt duty to the ſeveral States.

27th.—Intelligence was received, that the Indians had recently committed ſome outrages on the weſtern frontier; had killed and ſcalped 17 perſons near Wheeling Creek.

May 1ſt.—Congreſs had expreſſed their opinion in a reſolution which was this day publiſhed, that the term for which the men engaged for the war, are to ſerve, does not expire until the definitive treaty is received; and that then, thoſe engaged for the war, and who ſo continue, ſhall have their arms and accoutrements, as a preſent, for their long and faithful ſervices.

2d.—The next morning, the Commander in Chief was to go down the river, to Dobb's Ferry, to meet Gen. Sir Guy Carleton. Four companies of light-infantry marched this morning for that place, to do the duty of guards. Sir Guy was to come up the river in a frigate.

3d.—In the forenoon, the Commander in Chief, and Gov. Clinton, with their ſuites, &c. went down the river.

7th.—It was learnt that ſeveral veſſels had arrived at Boſton, from Europe, Halifax, &c. with merchandize; in conſequence of which, the price of goods had much fallen, and the inhabitants of the eaſtern States were fitting out a great number of fiſhing veſſels.

8th.—It was ſaid that 11,644 American priſoners had died, during the war, in the priſons, and on board the priſon-ſhips, at New-York: a ſurpriſing number, and evidences that if their treatment was not ſevere, they were too much crowded, or not properly attended to, in other reſpects. Thoſe who have ſeen, know, and others can eaſily conceive, that where men are cloſely confined in great numbers,

numbers, in priſon-ſhips, or in gaols, that without frequent airing and cleanſing, the air in ſuch places becomes putrid and poiſonous, and produces almoſt certain death. How much care then ought to be exerciſed by every humane commander, in the appointment of provoſt officers, to be aſſured that thoſe whom they appoint are not only firm and reſolute, (neceſſary qualifications in ſuch officers) but that they alſo are *conſiderate* and *humane;* and that ſuch commanders themſelves take care to know, and if neceſſary, correct any abuſes which may exiſt. Such conduct towards the confined and diſtreſſed, would add a laurel to the hero's brow, equal to the triumphs of victory, and more laſting: for if the merciful man be merciful even to his beaſt, how much more ought a great and brave man to feel for the unfortunate of his own ſpecies!

9th.—At evening, the Commander in Chief returned to head-quarters, having had an interview with Gen. Sir Guy Carleton.

15th.—The Commander in Chief went for Poughkeepſie. A letter from Gen. Sir Guy Carleton, to Gov. Clinton, had rendered an interview between the Governor and the Commander in Chief neceſſary.

16th.—At evening, the Commander in Chief returned to head-quarters.

28th.—The army about this time were badly ſupplied with proviſions, and much uneaſineſs was diſcovered, both by the officers and ſoldiers.

31ſt.—It was learnt that Congreſs had paſſed a reſolution, to furlough the men engaged for the war. This mode appeared to be marked with policy in ſeveral reſpects.

June 2d.—The general orders of the day announced, that the men engaged for the war, ſhould be immediately furloughed, with a proportion of the officers.

officers. They were to be discharged as soon as the definitive treaty arrived; they were to be marched home in divisions. Those men that remained engaged for other periods, were to be formed into complete corps. The officers to agree who should stay, and in cases where they could not agree, seniority was to decide.

3d.—The Maryland battalion was put under orders to march to the southward.

5th.—The Maryland battalion marched from the cantonment. The same day, the general officers, and officers commanding regiments and corps, in the cantonment on Hudson's River, having, by their committee for that purpose appointed, prepared an address to the Commander in Chief—it was accordingly presented, in the words following:—

"SIR,

"IT is difficult for us to express the regret we feel at being obliged again to solicit your Excellency's attention and patronage. Next to the anguish which the prospect of our own wretchedness excites in our breasts, is the pain which arises from a knowledge of your anxiety on account of those men who have been the sharers of your fortunes, and have had the honour of being your companions through the various vicissitudes of the war. Nothing, therefore, but necessity, could induce us to a representation which we know must give you concern.

"Your Excellency has so intimate a knowledge of the condition of the army, as to render a particular delineation unnecessary. As you have been a witness of our sufferings during a war uncommon in its nature, and unparalleled in many circumstances attending it; so you are now, Sir, no less a witness of the unequal burden which has fallen upon us, from the want of that provision, to which, from our assiduous

uous and unremitting ſervices, we conceive we are entitled. Having recently expreſſed our ſenſe of what was due to our diſtreſs; having repeated to your Excellency the confidence we had, that our accounts would be liquidated, the balances aſcertained, and adequate funds provided for payment, previous to our being diſperſed or diſbanded; having ſeen with pleaſure, the approbation which Congreſs gave our reliance, it is with a mixture of aſtoniſhment and chagrin, that we view the late reſolve of Congreſs, by which the ſoldiers for the war, and a proportionate number of officers, are to be furloughed without any one of thoſe important objects being accompliſhed; and, to complete the ſcene of woe, are to be compelled to leave the army without the means of defraying the debts we have neceſſarily incurred in the courſe of ſervice, or even of gratifying thoſe menials in the pittance which is their due; much leſs to carry with us that ſupport and comfort to our families, of which, from our long military ſervices, they have been deprived. No leſs expoſed then to the inſults of the meaneſt followers of the army, than to the arreſts of the ſheriff—deprived of the ability to aſſiſt our families, and without an evidence that any thing is due to us for our ſervices, and conſequently without the leaſt proſpect of obtaining credit for even a temporary ſubſiſtence, until we can get into buſineſs—to what quarter can we look? We take the liberty to ſay, Sir, only to your Excellency; and, from the ſincerity of our hearts, we do it no leſs from a perſuaſion of the efficiency of your further efforts in our favour, than from the kind aſſurances you have been pleaſed to give us of your ſupport.

"To your Excellency, then, we make our appeal, and in the moſt ſolemn manner, from that abhorrence of oppreſſion and injuſtice which firſt unſheathed

our

our ſwords; from the remembrance of the common dangers through which we have paſſed; and from the recollection of thoſe aſtoniſhing events, which have been effected by our united efforts,—permit us to ſolicit your further aid, and to entreat that the order of the 2d inſtant, founded on the act of Congreſs of the 26th of May laſt, may be ſuſpended or varied in its operation, ſo far as that no officer or ſoldier be obliged to receive a furlough until that honourable body can be apprized of the wretched ſituation into which the army muſt be plunged by a conformity to it; that your Excellency will endeavour to prevail on Congreſs—nay, that on the principles of common juſtice, you will inſiſt that neither officer nor ſoldier be compelled to leave the field until a liquidation of accounts can be effected, till the balances are aſcertained, certificates for the ſums due, given, including the commutation of half pay to the officers, and gratuity of 80 dollars to the ſoldiers; and till a ſupply of money can be furniſhed, ſufficient to carry us from the field of glory with honour to ourſelves and credit to our country. We ſtill wiſh to believe, that that country to which we have been ſo long devoted, will never look with indifference on the diſtreſſes of thoſe of her ſons who have ſo eſſentially contributed to the eſtabliſhment of Freedom, the ſecurity of property, and the rearing of an empire.

"In the name and behalf of the Generals and officers commanding regiments and corps, in the cantonment on Hudſon's River,

I have the honour to be,
With the higheſt reſpect,
Your Excellency's
Moſt obedient ſervant,
W. HEATH, Maj. Gen. *Preſident.*

June 5th, 1783."

To

To the foregoing addreſs, Gen. Waſhington was pleaſed to return the following anſwer, viz.

HEAD-QUARTERS, *June 6th*, 1783.

"SIR,

"BEFORE I make a reply to the ſubject of the addreſs of the Generals and Officers, commanding the regiments and corps of this army, preſented by yourſelf, yeſterday, I entreat that thoſe gentlemen will accept my warmeſt acknowledgment for the confidence they have been pleaſed to repoſe in me; they may be aſſured it ſhall never be abuſed: and I beg they will be perſuaded, that as no man can poſſibly be better acquainted than I am, with the paſt merits and ſervices of the army, ſo no one can poſſibly be more ſtrongly impreſſed with their preſent ineligible ſituation, feel a keener ſenſibility at their diſtreſſes, or more ardently deſire to alleviate or remove them. But it would be unneceſſary, perhaps, to enter into a detail of what I have done, and what I am ſtill attempting to do, in order to aſſiſt in the accompliſhment of this intereſting purpoſe. Let it be ſufficient to obſerve, I do not yet deſpair of ſucceſs; for I am perfectly convinced that the States cannot, without involving themſelves in national bankruptcy and ruin, refuſe to comply with the requiſitions of Congreſs; who, it muſt be acknowledged, have done every thing in their power to obtain ample and complete juſtice for the army; and whoſe great object in the preſent meaſure undoubtedly was, by a reduction of expenſe, to enable the Financier to make the three months' payment to the army, which on all hands has been agreed to be abſolutely and indiſpenſably neceſſary. To explain this matter, I beg leave to inſert an extract of a letter from the Superintendant of Finance, dated the 29th ult.

"It is now a month since the Committee conferred with me on that subject, and I then told them no payment could be made to the army, but by means of a paper anticipation; and unless our expenditures were immediately and considerably reduced, even that could not be done. Our expenditures have nevertheless been continued, and our revenues lessen, the States growing daily more and more remiss in their collections. The consequence is, that I cannot make payment in the manner first intended; the notes issued for this purpose would have been payable at two, four, and six months from the date, but at present they will be at six months, and even that will soon become impracticable, unless our expenses be immediately curtailed.

"I shall cause such notes to be issued for three months' pay to the army; and I must entreat, Sir, that every influence be used with the States to absorb them, together with my other engagements, by taxation."

"Three days ago, a messenger was dispatched by me to urge the necessity of forwarding these notes with the greatest possible expedition.

"Under this state of circumstances, I need scarcely add, that the expense of every day in feeding the whole army, will increase very considerably the inability of the public to discharge the debts already incurred, at least for a considerable time to come.

"Although the officers of the army very well know my official situation, that I am only a servant of the public, and that it is not for me to dispense with orders, which it is my duty to carry into execution; yet, as furloughs, in all services, are considered as a matter of indulgence and not of compulsion —as Congress, I am persuaded, entertain the best disposition towards the army—and, as I apprehend, in a very short time the two principal articles of complaint

plaint will be removed—I ſhall not heſitate to comply with the wiſhes of the army, under theſe reſervations only, that officers ſufficient to conduct the men who chooſe to receive furloughs, will attend them, either on furlough or by detachment. The propriety and neceſſity of this meaſure muſt be obvious to all; it need not, therefore, be enforced; and with regard to the non-commiſſioned officers and privates, ſuch as from a peculiarity of circumſtances wiſh not to receive furloughs at this time, will give in their names by 12 o'clock to-morrow, to the commanding officers of their regiments, that on a report to the Adjutant-General, an equal number of men, engaged for three years, may be furloughed, which will make the ſaving of expenſes exactly the ſame to the public.

"I cannot but hope the notes will ſoon arrive, and that the ſettlement of accounts may be completed, by the aſſiſtance of the Pay-Maſters, in a very few days. In the mean time, I ſhall have the honour of laying the ſentiments of the Generals and Officers, commanding regiments and corps, before Congreſs; they are expreſſed in ſuch a decent, candid and affecting manner, that I am certain every mark of attention will be paid to them.

I have the honour to be,

With great eſteem, Sir,

Your moſt obedient Servant,

(Signed) GEO. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. HEATH."

The two preceding papers were encloſed in the following letter from the Commander in Chief to his Excellency the Preſident of Congreſs.

HEAD-QUARTERS,

HEAD-QUARTERS, NEWBURGH, *June* 7, 1783.

"SIR,

"I HAVE the honour to encloſe to your Excellency the copy of an addreſs to me, from the Generals and Officers, commanding regiments and corps, together with my anſwer to it. Theſe encloſures will explain the diſtreſſes which reſulted from the meaſures now carrying into execution, in conſequence of the reſolution of the 26th of May; but the ſenſibility occaſioned by a parting ſcene, under ſuch peculiar circumſtances, will not admit of deſcription!

"The two ſubjects of complaint with the army, appear to be the delay of the three months' payment which had been expected, and the want of a ſettlement of accounts. I have thought myſelf authorized to aſſure them, Congreſs had and would attend particularly to their grievances; and have made ſome little variation reſpecting furloughs, from what was at firſt propoſed; the Secretary at War will be able to explain the reaſon and propriety of this alteration.

"While I conſider it a tribute of juſtice, on this occaſion, to mention the temperate and orderly behaviour of the whole army, and particularly the accommodating ſpirit of the officers, in arranging themſelves to the command of the battalions which will be compoſed of the three years' men; permit me to recall to mind all their former ſufferings and merits, and to recommend their reaſonable requeſts to the early and favourable notice of Congreſs.

I have the honour to be, &c."

A little before this time, the officers of the army beginning to realize that the diſſolution of the army was drawing nigh, and wiſhing to perpetuate that friendſhip which numerous hardſhips, ſufferings, and common dangers had inſpired in their breaſts,—reſolved to form themſelves into a Society,

by

by the name of the *Cincinnati*. Several meetings were had for the purpose, and an Institution was digested and completed; and although our General presided at one of the meetings, and cheerfully, at the request of his brother officers, transmitted copies of the Institution, covered by a letter, to the officer commanding the southern army, and to the senior officers of the respective State lines, from Pennsylvania to Georgia—yet he had serious objections to the Institution, as it stood, and refused for some time to sign it. He wished, as much as any one in the army, to perpetuate the happy friendship cemented in the breasts of the officers by an eight years common danger and sufferings; but he thought this would be best done, by simply forming a Society, to meet annually in their respective States, for the purpose of a social hour, and to brighten the chain of friendship, with a fund for the relief of the unfortunate of their brethren; but he was opposed to any idea of any thing that had any resemblance of an order, or any insignia or badge of distinction, *asserting* that it would only serve to mark them in an unfavourable light with their fellow-citizens: but the prevailing opinion of the officers was otherwise. Our General was finally induced to sign the Institution, from the following consideration—(but not until all the officers were appointed, and he nearly ready to leave the army) conversing with an officer of rank, who was of the same opinion with him, they parted in the resolution not to sign the Institution; but the next morning, the officer called upon him, and observed, that one consideration, not before mentioned, had occurred to him, viz. that it might happen in the days of their posterity, in case they did not sign, that the descendant of one who was a member might happen to fall in company with the descendant of one who was not; that the latter, on observing the badge,

might

might inquire what it was, and what its intention? upon its being anſwered, that it was the inſignia of a Society, of which his anceſtor, who ſerved in the American army, during the revolution, was a member—the other might reply, my anceſtor too ſerved during that war, but I never heard any thing of ſuch a badge in our family; to which it might probably be anſwered, it is likely your anceſtor was guilty of ſome miſconduct, which deprived him of it. Upon this, our General broke out—"I ſee it, I ſee it, and ſpurn the idea;" which led him to ſign the general Inſtitution: and he ſubſcribed to the State fund, 166 dollars, being one month's pay, as was ſtipulated in the Inſtitution. He however never met with the Society, although no one has cheriſhed a warmer affection for every member of the army. After the revolution in France, finding that the inſignias of diſtinctions were doing away, it led him *anew* to review the diſtinction which the *badge* of the Society to which he belonged, if not in fact, yet in appearance ſeemed to exhibit, and brought to mind all his former objections, which induced him to write to the Secretary-General to eraſe his name from the Inſtitution; but that his ſubſcription to the fund ſhould remain, ſo long as it was applied to the purpoſe for which it was given—the relief of the unfortunate.

6th.—In the forenoon, the Jerſey line marched from the cantonment to their own State, where they were to be diſbanded. The ſame day, the firſt New-York regiment made a preſent of their ſtandards and band to Governor Clinton; they were eſcorted to Poughkeepſie by the light-infantry company of the regiment.

8th.—The men for the war, belonging to the Maryland, New-Jerſey, New-York, and New-Hampſhire lines, having marched from the cantonment, a

diviſion

diviſion of the Maſſachuſetts men marched on this day.

9th.—A diviſion of the Suffolk and Worceſter furloughed men, marched for their own State, and ſo on, a diviſion each day, until the whole had marched.

10th.—Our General was General of the Day. In the after orders of the Commander in Chief on this day, it was expreſſed—"The ſtrength of the army in this cantonment being conſiderably diminiſhed by the number of men lately furloughed, the order of the 16th of April, directing a General, Field-Officers, and Quarter-Maſter to be of the day, and alſo a regiment to parade every day for duty, is diſpenſed with. For the preſent, there will be one Field-Officer, and an Adjutant of the day; and the guards only will form on the grand parade at 9 o'clock in the morning." It is here a little remarkable, that our General, by whoſe orders and under whoſe direction the firſt guard in the American war mounted at the foot of Proſpect Hill, on the evening of the 19th of April, 1775, after the battle of that day, ſhould happen, in the courſe of ſervice, to be the laſt General of the day in the American main army, on the 10th of June, 1783, to inſpect, turn off, and viſit the guards. At the firſt period, the roads were full of *militia*, preſſing towards Boſton, to commence and proſecute a dubious war; they were now filled with *veteran ſoldiers*, covered with laurels, returning from the field to their peaceful abodes.

11th.—About 2 o'clock, P. M. the wind freſhened from the weſt; there were ſeveral thunder-ſhowers, with large hail-ſtones, ſome of which were ſuppoſed to be two inches long. The lightning ſtruck the flag-ſtaff of the New Building, entered the houſe, and ran down the ſouth ſide of it, doing ſome damage, and ſtunning ſeveral ſoldiers near the door. In

the

the general orders of this day, it was announced, that the *levees* were to be discontinued.

13th.—The men who had enlisted for 3 years, and for shorter periods not expired, were formed, those belonging to Massachusetts into 4 regiments, and were to be commanded by Colonels Michael Jackson, Henry Jackson, and Joseph Vose, and Lieut. Col. Commandant Sprout. On the morning of the 16th, these regiments incorporated, and were formed into two brigades, the one commanded by Brig. Gen. Patterson, the other by Brig. Gen. Greaton.

19th.—A number of officers of the army, viz. several general officers, and officers commanding regiments and corps, met at the New Building, and elected his Excellency Gen. Washington, President General; Gen. M'Dougal, Treasurer; and Gen. Knox, Secretary, *pro tempore*, to the Society of the Cincinnati.

20th.—The Massachusetts State Society of the Cincinnati met, and made choice of Maj. Gen. Lincoln for their President; Maj. Gen. Knox, Vice-President; Col. John Brooks, Secretary; Col. Henry Jackson, Treasurer; and Capt. Heywood, Assistant-Treasurer. The same day, the troops at the cantonment were put under orders, to be ready to march for West-Point on the succeeding Monday.

22d.—Our General issued his last order, which finished as follows: "The long wished for period having arrived, when the din of war ceases, the olive-branch of peace is displayed, the toils and fatigues of the field are drawing to a close, a part of the army have already mingled with their fellow-citizens, and others will probably ere long join them—Maj. Gen. Heath being about to leave the army, and this being the last opportunity which will remain in his power, to express that affection for his brother officers and soldiers, which more than eight years service has established

tabliſhed in his breaſt, he cannot depart without leaving his beſt wiſhes for the health, proſperity and happineſs of thoſe, whoſe lot it is a little longer to continue in the field—invoke every bleſſing on them, and bid them an affectionate farewel."

23d.—The Maſſachuſetts regiments marched to Weſt-Point.

The morning of the 24th, our General was to commence his journey homeward; but the Commander in Chief wiſhed him not to proceed until the afternoon. On his arrival at head-quarters, Col. Humphries, one of the Aids-de-Camp of the Commander in Chief, gave him a ſealed letter, obſerving to him to read it at his leiſure. On opening it, in General Waſhington's own hand-writing it was as follows:

(*Private.*)

HEAD-QUARTERS, *June 24th*, 1783.

"DEAR SIR,

"PREVIOUS to your departure from the army, I wiſh to take an opportunity of expreſſing my ſentiments of your ſervices, my obligations for your aſſiſtance, and my wiſhes for your future felicity.

"Our object is at laſt attained; the arrangements are almoſt completed, and the day of ſeparation is now at hand. Permit me, therefore, to thank you for the trouble you have lately taken in the arrangement of the corps under your orders, as well as for all your former cheerful and able exertions in the public ſervice. Suffer me to offer this laſt teſtimony of my regard to your merits; and give me leave, my dear Sir, to aſſure you of the real affection and eſ-

teem with which I am, and shall at all times, and under all circumstances, continue to be

Your sincere friend, and
Very humble servant,
(Signed) G. WASHINGTON.

Maj. Gen. Heath."

In the afternoon, the general officers were in Council at head-quarters, in consequence of an express from Philadelphia. Four or five hundred men of the Pennsylvania line, of those who had been furloughed on or about the 20th, grew very mutinous, refused to obey orders, entered the city of Philadelphia, seized some public stores, surrounded the place where Congress and the Supreme Court of the State were sitting, and made several demands, and occasioned some consternation, which caused a representation to the Commander in Chief. The continental regiments were to be put under marching orders immediately. It was judged inexpedient to call out the militia.

At about 5 o'clock, P. M. our General took his leave of his beloved General, and commenced his journey for Massachusetts, and arrived at his house in Roxbury on the first day of July, at 2 o'clock, P. M. where he gave evidence that an eight years military life had not divested him of the feelings or manners of a citizen.

October 30th.—It was learnt, that the definitive treaty of peace was signed the 3d of the preceding September; and that dispatches were sent off to the different Courts in Europe, to America, the East and West Indies, &c. with an account of this happy event.

Congress, by a proclamation which bore date the 18th of this month, discharged from further service such

ſuch ſoldiers as were engaged for the war, and officers who were abſent by derangement and furlough. The diſcharges to take place the 3d of November, enſuing.

November 2d.—Gen. Waſhington iſſued his laſt and farewel orders to the federal armies, taking an affectionate leave of them, and giving them his beſt advice.

4th.—Gen. Waſhington, by proclamation, in compliance with a reſolve of Congreſs of the 29th of the preceding October, diſcharged all the troops in the ſervice of the United States, that were then in Pennſylvania, or to the ſouthward thereof, except the garriſon of Fort Pitt.

The Britiſh troops having left New-York, on the 25th of November, at one o'clock, P. M. a detachment of the American army took poſſeſſion of the city; after which, his Excellency General Waſhington, and Governor Clinton, made their public entry, properly eſcorted, &c. The Governor gave a public dinner at Frances' tavern.

December 2d.—There was a grand exhibition of fire-works in celebration of the peace, at the bowling-green, in Broadway. The magnificent fire-works far exceeded any before exhibited in the United States.

On the 4th, at noon, a great number of American officers of diſtinction met at Frances' tavern, to take their leave of their great Commander, Gen. Waſhington, who, on filling a glaſs of wine, addreſſed his brave compatriots as follows:—

"With an heart full of love and gratitude, I now take leave of you—I moſt devoutly wiſh that your latter days may be as proſperous and happy, as your former ones have been glorious and honourable."

The

The diſſolution of the American army (excepting a ſmall detachment of artillery and of infantry) took place a few days after; and General WASHINGTON, ere long, retired to his ſeat at Mount Vernon, covered with every laurel with which his own victorious conduct, and a grateful country, could adorn him; and with the applauſe of an admiring world.

THE END.

ERRATA.

Page 46, line 2, for *Montreſos* read *Montreſors.*
P. 54, laſt line, after *below*, place a *ſemicolon.*
P. 65, l. 18, for *Lo!* r. *low*, and place the inverted commas at "*we.*
Ibid, l. 4 from the bottom, for *boats* r. *boat.*
P. 67, l. 12 from the bottom, for *neck* r. *creek.*
P. 69, l. 14 from the bottom, after *reſerve* place a *comma.*
P. 104, l. 8 and 9, for *Erving* r. *Ewing.*
P. 111, l. 10 from the bottom, for *Delaney's* r. *Delancy's.*
P. 199, l. 13 from the bottom, for *Gambice* r. *Gambier.*
P. 207, l. 14, for *proceed* r. *proceeded.*
P. 210, l. 5, for *ſurrounded* r. *ſupported.*
P. 244, l. 9, for *Seville* r. *Leville.*
Ibid, l. 10, for *Fautaſque* r. *Fantaſque.*
P. 276, l. 18, for *Mecklenburgh* r. *Muhlenburgh.*
P. 298, l. 7 from the bottom, for *minutes* r. *minuter.*
P. 314, l. 3, for *were* r. *where.*